Charls the great
Alexander the great. 3 Monarch. of Macedonia. D: 7. 6
HE
HISTORY
Chronicle
Floode
chiefest Monar
Percia. Gree
ome are b&d
Abridge
By
Sleydan
Caius Caeser 4 Monar of Rome D. 7. 7
1631

THE Key of Hiſtory. OR,

A moſt methodicall Abridgement of the foure chiefe Monarches, *Babylon, Perſia, Greece,* and *Rome.*

Being a generall and compendious Chronicle from the Flood:

Digeſted into three bookes.

Whereunto is added a marginall Cronologie of euery Romane Emperours Raigne, end of all the moſt memorable perſons and accidents.

Together with briefe illuſtrations vpon the more obſcure names places, and office.

The ſecond Edition:

Written by that excellent and moſt learned man IOHN SLEIDAN.

LONDON,
Printed for *William Sheares*, and and are to be ſould at his ſhop at the great South doore of S^t. *Paules* Church, 1631.

The Tranſlator to *the indifferent Reader.*

THE praiſe of Hiſtory in generall, or this Generall Hiſtory, being but tralatitious, eſpecially both ſpeaking their owne worth, may bee my Apologie for both; eyther to excuſe me from the vſuall encomions in the preface to moſt Hiſtories, or diſmiſſe mee with *Saluſts* ſpeech concerning *Carthage*, 'Tis

better to speake nothing, then not to speake home. For the first thereof, *Ciceroes* fiue most significant, and seuerally volume worthy *Epithetes*, shall suffice: Hiſtory is *Times euidence, Antiquities Herald, Truths light, memories life, & lifes Miſtreſſe*: And for the other, (this Chronicall Hiſtory following) beſides the Authors own admired and approued knowledge in hiſtory the large Commentaries, and explication of the originall Authors, ſet forth by the accurate inveſtigation of two reuerend Diuines, and a famous Poet, warrant it. His maine drift, as thou mayſt eaſily perceiue, was to bee

ſuc-

ſuccinct and cloſe, but with all perſpicuous, by which hee hath made him ſelfe the Prince of *Epitomiſts*: and by his tranſcendent delineation of the foure chiefe Monarchies chiefe Monarch of all Hiſtorians in this kind. For hee hath attain'd to ſuch a height of perfection, that as, *Polybius* would haue it, a man may at the firſt view, behold the whole body of Hiſtory, and euery member ſo pourtraied to life, that ſcarce any man of eminency, or act of excellency, eyther in Church or Commonwealth, is omittted: being withall ſo exactly and methodically coucht together, that thy eye may run

in a line, from the beginning to the end. Hee hath made it a common *Key* to euery doore, and a little *Perſpecill* to carry thy ſight all the world ouer: the worke it ſelfe, being the very *marrow* and *quinteſſence* (pardon the metaphors) of all hiſtorie. The conſideration hereof inuited me (one moſt vnfit) to aduenture the tranſplantation of this pretious exoticke roote, into our owne ſoile. Wherein my care to the Authors meaning was religious, which (as I ſuppos'd) would bee the chiefeſt thing aym'd at; eſpecially in an old mans laſt worke (for hee ended this booke & his life both in

in one yeare,) where wee must not looke for a Panegyricall stile, or lofty words (which I might haue perform'd and perhaps with more ease) but, as it is a plaine, facile, and methodicall narration best suiting with the tender capacity of younger *Incipients*, for whom the Author entending it, well knowing that oftentimes young wits dote more vpon frothy words, then solid matter. Plainnesse is my ambition, else needed not these little marginall illustrations only to satisfie a meere Englisth Reader. in some places, (if thou considerest not my reasons) I may seeme to swerue from the Au-

thors meaning.

As in the word *Cæsar* which the Author vses for Emperour, almost throughout the booke. But after *Nero* I call them all Emperors (onely for more plainnesse) because the line of the *Cæsars* was extinct in him.

France I call *Gallia*, till about *Honorius* his time, when (after the French *Germans* had seated themselues there) it fell into their name. I haue taken the same course too, touching other Countries and Cities, till they chang'd their names: except such, as still (with very little alteration of the ancient idiomes) reteind their names, as

as *Vesontio* now *Besanson*. *Suessions* now *Soissons*, &c. Some may thinke, that *Iulius Cæsar* would haue founded better then *Caius Cæsar*, (by which name the Author calls him in euery place) becauſe that compellation is more commonly knowne: but queſtionleſſe the Authors meaning therein, was to auoyd all doubts; for wee reade of more of the *Cæsars* beſides him, that had the *nomen Iulius*, as *Lucius Iulius Cæsar*, and *Sext Iulius Cæsar*, but neuer any other call'd *Caius*, that euer I heard of.

For my well-meaning preſumption, in adding the times of each more memotable accident, and of the

ſeuerall raignes of all the Emperours; I hope I ſhall finde pardon, ſith it may ſerue for a little Chronology.

Though I cannot bee ſo ambitious to deſire a freedome from euery open-mouth'd *Ardelio*, when the beſt deſeruing men could neuer yet obtaine it; yet I both wiſh and intreate that euery indifferent eye would make a charitable conſtruction of (if I may ſo call them) my good endeauours, ballancing all veniall errours, with my young experience, and inconuenience of ſtudy, and to accept of the Diamond though not ſet in it's deſerued foile: the one may encourage

encourage, the other cannot daunt mee, for I haue set vp my resolution, in old *Mimnermus* his Distich:

Oblectes animum, plebs est morosa legendo,
Ille bene de te dicet, & ille male.

Farewell

TO THE MOST Illuſtrious Prince, *Eberard*, Duke of *Wittenberg and Leck*, Count in *Mumpelgart*; *Iohn Sleidan* wiſheth all health, &c.

Literature being the greateſt ornament of your dignity, (Princely Eberard) *though it be but indifferent*; *yet that eſpecially, which comprehends in it the Acts of all ages, ſuits beſt to your Condition: And amongſt vs that profeſſe the name*

name of Chriſt; the holy Scriptures challenge the higheſt place in this kinde, which both ſet forth the originall of man kinde, ſhew vs Gods will, and affoord vs many examples both of his mercy and wrath. Next to them wee ought to know, what is deliuered to memory concerning other Nations. For ſcarce can that accident happen, whereof there is not ſome patterne extant, and in former times practiſed. In which behalfe, thoſe that gouerne a Common-wealth, haue an exceeding great helpe and furtherance, if they neglect not this kinde of learning. Now that way is moſt commodious, which diuides the whole courſe of this

this world into foure Monarchies. As concerning the first of them, we want bookes necessary, having besides the Scripture, almost nothing credit worthy, or whereupon we may rely. That age questionlesse was altogether heroicall and most illustrious for surpassing and memorable exploits. But what part thereof came to our hands? Semiramis, Babylon, *and* Sardanapalus *are memorized, and almost nothing else. But for that dreadfull, and neuer yet paralleld, terrible, and dire spectacle seene in any one man, which* Nabuchadonozer *relates of himselfe, as* Daniel *hath it; who euer toucht vpon it? that a King of such puissance.*

should

ſhould bee brutified, caſt out of his kingdome, baniſhed from his ancient habitation, thruſt out of doores, excluded from all humane ſociety, haue this nature metamorphoſed, and feed with other bruit beaſts, and be quite degenerated into a beaſt. This *is there related plainly; but with what aſtoniſhment thinke we, were they ſtrucken that beheld this lamentable example of Gods Maieſty and fury?* Therefore *I haue briefly runne ouer the* Aſſyrian *or* Babylonian *Monarchy, becauſe it muſt be wholly bounded within the compaſſe of holy Scriptures; but the other three that follow, are very famous by many Authors workes; eſpecally the*

the Greek *and* Roman. *Amongſt which writers, thoſe* (*of the* Greeks) *challenge the firſt ranke*, Herodotus, Thucidides, Zenophon and Polybius : *for thoſe other that* Cicero *mentions*, Pherecides, Hellanicus, Acuſilas, Phylliſtus, Agathoclis, Theopompus, Ephorus, Califthenes, Timæus, Clitarchus, Silenus, *are loſt* : *as alſo thoſe* Latines *that wrote the ancient* Romane *hiſtory, whom the ſame* Cicero *nominates*, viz. *the* Pontifies Annals, Fabius Pictor, Marcus Portius Cato, Lucius Piſo, Cælius Antipater, Caius Vannius, Vennonius, Clodius, Aſiſo, Accius, Lucius Siſenna. *And thoſe indeed*

were

were the Authors, out of whom, Titus Liuius, *who is better halfe diſmembred, and before him,* Saluſt, *imperfect alſo, collected their workes.* Cicero *indeed vſed not this kind of writting, but was moſt ſtudiouſly verſt in it, as his Bookes witneſſe, which are euery where beſprinkled and inameled with remembrances of all antiquity: but hee was a moſt diligent obſeruer of the courſe of times, ſo as by him, one may attaine to the orderly knowledge both of perſons, ages and the times of accidents. For otherwiſe all writtings are obſcure: and becauſe hee was wont to ſay, that the writings of hiſtories) eſpecially after the* Greek *faſhion)*

was

was very much Oratoricall: therefore Pomponius Atticus *counſailed him to this kinde of writing, complaining that Hiſtory ſtood in neede of the Latine tongue: and alledging, that hee was able to effect that, which, euen in this kind of writing alſo, would make* Rome *not inferiour to* Greece. *So hee writ a Commentary of his Conſulſhip in* Greeke, *and begunne another in Latine, as he ſayth himſelfe. For hee was very deſirous to haue that yeare, where in he was Conſull, celebrated by other mens pennes: inſomuch that he profeſſed, that if they forbeare him, hee would not forbeare himſelfe, but would write concerning himſelfe.*

Caius

Caius Cæſar *onely, writes of his owne exploits, and borrowed nothing from any of thoſe before him. Then alſo flouriſht* Diodorus *of* Sicilia, *and a little after,* Dionyſius *of* Halicarnaſſus: *then* Plutarch, Suetonius Cornelius Tacitus, Appianus, Herodianus, Trogus Pompeius, Ælianus, Quintus Curtius: *but many of thoſe are either wholly, or the greater part of them loſt After thoſe, many more followed, who (each one continuing the Hiſtory of his time, or of his Country) held on, euen till within our memory. And we muſt bee ſeene in all thoſe, or at leaſt a good part of them, to furniſh our ſelues with that abilitie which*

which is required. Some also we must read for the matter it selfe; others, for the matter, together with the stile and form of speech. In which ranke Caius Cæsar *alone, iustly challenges precedency among the Latine: for none are more pure, none more elegant then his: who for a delectable style, farre excelled not onely those that came not long after him, but also all of his time. Besides those before mentioned, we must likewise turne ouer such Ecclesiasticall Authors, as treat of the conuersion of Religion, the afflictions of the godly, or the lawes and decrees of Councels and Bishops. and because the holy Scriptures foreshew the Papall kingdome,*

dome. wee must seareh out the beginning, together with the progresse and increase thereof, thereby to inable our selues, to compare it with those marks and signes which the Scripture hath chalkt out. But because this large argument which wee haue propounded, is various manifold, and combersome, and this field so exceeding spacious not to bee gone ouer in any short time: some nearer way must be taken, by a methodicall course, for the help of yonger Students: as for those of deeper experience, they may well enough by themselues, as they say swim ouer the whole streame of Writers. And for this end haue I vnder taken this task

that

that the Neoterie may haue a tract and path way leading to their further learning, by which in the meane time, they may trace, as by a line till they bee growne riper ſchollers, and come to that proficiency, as to be able to caſt away and deſpiſe thoſe rudiments. For I haue not writ this, that they ſhould be content with, or confine themſelues to theſe bounds, but to giue them a taſt of their future reading: when being inuited by variety of matter, they may bee more ſpurred on, hereafter to perluſtrate the Authors and Bookes themſelues, from whence theſe are culled, But this kinde of ſtudie properly appertaining to thoſe, that are

are appointed to the gouern-ment of a people, as I said before, I suppose (most Noble Duke) I shall not misapplie, to your age and condition, in offring vp those my small watch workes to your High-nesse: so that by you, and through your hands as I may so say, the residue of yonger Students, may receiue some fruit thereof, if any may redound from thence. And albeit, those most wor-thy men, your Tutors, Iohn Sigismund *and* Sebastian Cox, *vse their best dili-gence about your instruction and erudition: yet as in the culture of a little garden plot, which we desire to haue exquisite and arraied with all kind of flowers, we scorne not*

not any little plants & herbs brought vs from another ground; so likewise I hope this small present of mine, sent to the manuring of the seed-plot of your learning, will not be inacceptable, being but onely offred vp for a time, til you your self, hauing gotten strength, as I sayd before, be able to walke abroad, and course vp and down these open fields & flowrie meads. For which course, you haue that most renowned Prince, your Fathers vertue, for a resplendent patterne: who by his elegant learning, added no small ornament and lustre to his Noble birth; and that which is all in all, hee made right vse of this his faculty: to wit, that the name

name of God ſhould bee celebrated, Churches & Schools well ordered, godly teachers prouided for, and a competency allowed for maintenance of Schollers. For this duty God chiefly requires at the hands of you Princes; and as he ſeuerely punniſheth the neglect there, ſo alſo hee remunerates thoſe with moſt bountifull rewards that ſhew themſelues faithfull Stewards herein. Thoſe examples of your illuſtrious Fathers piety, conſtancy, and fortitude, might bee mentioned by name: but you will reade them in good time hereafter, imblazoned at large, & ſhall know the proper ornaments of Nobility. For hee that is benigne to

good

good wits, how can it be, that hee should not at one time or other, bee repayed by them, with the deserued fruits of gratitude, and bee celebrated to posteritie? Therefore vnderstanding both the dignity of his places, and the charge layd vpon him by God; hee made it his chiefe care to haue your minde trayned vp to godlinesse and learning, euen from your young and tender yeares. And that which is the feeling pulse of a Fathers loue, nothing euer ioyd him more, then to see his expectation bettered by your industrie. And I doubt not of your owne voluntary propension that way (as much as your age can beare) and your Tutors

tors their diligent vigilancie. Wherefore Illustrious Prince, proceed auspiciously, and as you are borne to the gouernement of a Commonwealth, so furnish your selfe with such ammunition, as is both perpetuall, and will affoord infallible ayde: and not onely extenuate the labour, which you must sometimes vndergoe in gouerning an ancient Prouince, but also make it easie and pleasant.

From *Strasburg*, Anno Dom. 1550.

IOHN SLEIDAN

of the foure chiefe Monarchies.

OR,

The Key of Hiſtory.

The firſt Booke.

BEfore I treat of the foure chiefe and principall Monarchies of the world, *Babilon*, *Perſia*, *Greece* and *Rome*: I muſt ſpeake a word or two of the great difference, about the computation of yeares from

the beginning of the world; for the *Hebrewes*, *Eusebius*, S. *Austin*, *Alphonsus*, and *Mirandula* doe exceedingly vary amongst themselues. But because almost all the learned men of our times, doe in this point follow the account of the **Hebrewes**: I also (seeing the case so stands) will tread in their steppes. And first of all, that I may come to my purpose, I meane the first *Monarchie*, (passing by those occurrents which happened in the [a] first age of all, as also the narration of the *Flood*, sithence all those are contained in holy Scriptures, and cannot bee better expreſt,) I'le take start at that time, when the race of mankinde being reduced to a very small number, begunne (after that the * massie multitude of waters was againe dispersed, and the earth made drie) to increase anew. The time

[a] Gen. 12, 3, 4, 5, &c. chap.

* moles.

time of the *Flood* is referred to the yeere of the world, 1656. and [b] *Mathuſalah* the ſeauenth from *Adam*, died at that very time, being 969. yeeres of age. [c] *Noah Mathuſalah* his *Grandchild by his ſonne *Lamech*, (being then 600. yeeres of age, and by Gods eſpeciall fauour, preſerued together with his family,) now when the number of men begunne to multiply by little and little, was the firſt that cauſed his children and poſterity, by remooving into ſeuerall Countries, to inhabite the earth, and build themſelues cities: and afterwards (about the hundreth yeere after the Flood) allotted to each of them his proper Prouince.

[b] Gen. 5.

[c] Gen. 7.
*Nepos.

At which time, *Nimrod Noahs* Grand-childes ſonne, together with his retinue, inhabited the land of the *Chaldees*, but at length the multi-

tude of men ſtill multiplying,) many were neceſſarily inforced to remoue and ſeeke out new ſeates and Colonies. They before their departure, deſirous, to leaue their perpetuall memoriall behinde them, did thereupon (d *Nimrod* being their Chieftaine) beginne to build a Citie, and within that, a Tower of tranſcendent height: And forgetting Gods wrath, which had ſo lately ſwallowed vp the whole Globe of the earth,& whereof *Noah* without all doubt, had very much, very often, and diligently preached to them: intended to extend the fame of their owne names, by vaineglorious and ambitious workes. But God herewith offended, made fruſtrate theſe their enterpriſes, ſending amongſt them a confuſion of tongues: whereas before that time, there was but one and the

d Gen. 11. It is credible that hereupon the Poets took occaſion to make that fiction of the Giants who heaping mountaine vpon mountain, went about to ouerthrow the gods. *Michael Glycas* writes, that there were forty yeers ſpent about building of this Tower.

the same kinde of language all the world ouer. Thus being constrained to surcease their begunne worke, they departed into seuerall parts of the world. From this confusion of tongues, the citie called *Babell*, took the name: & frō ỹ time, I mean frō the 131. yeer after the Flood, or therabouts, the kingdome of the *Chaldees* & *Babylonians* took the beginnings. The first King thereof was *Nimrod*, before spoken of, who as it is written, ruled 56. yeeres. The Scripture stiles him the [c] mighty Hunter, and attributes to him strength and puissance. Others call him *Saturne*, and report, that in the 45. yeere of his raign, he sent away certaine Princes of Colonies, hither and thither, as *Assur*, *Madai*, *Magog*, and *Mosech*. Those erected kingdomes after their owne names, as *Assyria*, *Media*, [f] *Magog*, and *Moseo*, the

[c] Gen. 10. 1 Chron 1. Mich 5. The land of *Babylon* is called the land of *Nimrod*.

[f] *Suidas* writes, that the *Persians* were so called, but *Melanchthon* thinks them to be the now Turks.

two first whereof doe wholy belong to *Asia* and the third and last to *Asia*, and *Europe*. The Scripture makes mention of this g *Assur*, and that *Ninive* was by him builded. *Iupiter Belus* succeeded his Father *Nimrod*, who (as historie speakes) possessed all the Country from the sunne-setting to *Sarmatia* in *Europe*, and afterwards made warre against *Sabbatius* King of *Saga*, whom not hee, by reason hee was preuented by death, but his sonne *Ninus* subdued: who extending his dominions farre and wide, was the first that euer tooke vpon him a Monarchie. *Noah* died 350. yeares after the Flood, and about the 18. yeare after his death, h *Abraham* the tenth from *Noah* (so commanded by God) left his Country, being then 75. yeares of age, and in i 24 yeares after that, God made a couenant with

g *Assur.* Gen. 10.

Belus.

Ninus the first Monarch, about 1905. of the world.

h Gen. 11.

i Gen. 17.

with him, by ordaining the circumciſion. In the [k] 100 yeere of his age, his ſonne *Iſaac* was borne vnto him: hee liued after that, 75. yeeres, for the terme of mans life was now much ſhortened. The manner of his Grand-childe *Iacobs* life, and vpon what occaſion hee went downe into Egypt, and there dyed: how afterwards his poſteritie remained in Egypt for ſome ages, oppreſſed with moſt grieuous bondage, and by Gods fauour brought out and ſet at liberty by his ſeruant *Moſes*, the holy [m] Scriptures declare. This departing of the children of Iſrael out of Egypt, is referred to the yeere of the world, 2454. that is, 430. yeeres after the promiſe made to *Abraham*, as [n] S. *Paul* hath it. After *Moſes*, the children of Iſrael were gouerned by Iudges, till the dayes of *Saul*, whom *Dauid*

k Gen. 21.

Gen. 27

m From the 30. ch. of Gen. to the 14. Exod. of

n Gal. 3.

(another King of the same people) succeeded. Now let vs returne to the Empire of *Babylon*; *Ninus* being dead, his wife *Semiramis* succeeded him in his Empire: who in riches, victories, and triumphs, was inferiour to no mortall Prince. She inlarged the towne of *Babylon*, and made it a citie of sufficient greatnesse, adorning it with diuers faire buildings, and inuironing it with a wall. Shee subdued *Æthiopia*, and made warre also in *India*. Her sonne *Zameis* the fifth King, performed nothing worthy of memorie; but *Arius*, who next succeeded him, conioyned the *Bactrians* and *Caspians* to his Empire. It is written, that *Aralius* his successor was renowned for his wit and prowesse, but what he atchieued, is not committed to writing. The next to him *Baleus*, subdued many Nations, extending his domi-

Semiramis.

Zameis.

Arius.

Aralius.

Baleus.

dominions euen vnto *Iudea*, and was therefore ſirnamed *Xerxes*, that is, a conquerour, and triumpher, or warriour. *Armatrites* the ninth, was altogether giuen ouer to pleaſure and idleneſſe. There is nothing witten of *Belochus* the tenth, but that hee applied himſelfe to the ſtudie of ſoothſaying and diuining. *Balens* the eleuenth, paralleld *Semiramis*, in renown for his prowes, and militarie induſtrie, and hath the fame, to haue beene highly extolled in ſundry learned mens workes. *Altadas* the twelfth, of him it is recorded, that he followed his eaſe and tranquilitie of life, accounting it a poynt of folly, to be wearied with multiplicity of labours, and fettered with varietie of cares about inlarging the bounds of his kingdome, becauſe it tended not to the weale and commoditie of

Armatrites.

Belochus.

Altadas.

of any men, but rather to their endammagement & seruitude.

Mamitus. His successour *Mamitus* the thirteenth, stirred vp his subiects on fresh againe, to diligence and industry in military affaires, and his puissance gaue cause of suspition to the *Syrians* and *Egyptians*.

Mancaleus. For *Mancaleus* the fourteenth, his actions affoord not argument worth the discourse.

Spharus. *Spharus* the fifteenth is commended for his great vertue and wisedome.

Mamelus. There is no mention in writing of any memorable act performed by *Mamelus* the sixteenth.

Sparetus. In *Sparetus* the seuenteetnh his raigne histories report, that wõdrous accidents hapned euery where.

Ascatades. *Ascatades* the eighteenth brought all *Syria* vnder his subiection. And thus farre the supposed *Berosus*, of whose writings almost all men make a doubt, & thinke them counterfeit: but

because

becauſe wee haue no other records extant, they follow this order. Others reckon 20 Kings more together with *Sardanapalus*, making him the eight and thirteeth King of the *Aſſyrians*. This King as without all compare the moſt effeminate of them, continually ſitting amongſt harlots, ſpinning and carding with them, and ſo totally plunged in voluptuouſneſſe, that he would ſcarce euer ſhew himſelfe in publike. For this cauſe two of his Rulers, *Belochus* of *Babylon*, & *Arbaces* of the *Medes*, alienating their affection from him, after they had emblazon'd his filthineſſe and laſciuiouſneſſe vp and downe amongſt the vulgar, made warre againſt him. Hee with his womaniſh troopes, hauing ſcarce ioyn'd battell (ſuch was his bad ſucceſſe) fled to his palace, and there cauſing a great fire to be made

See their names at the end of the Booke.

Sardanapalus.

made, threw himselfe and all his goods into it. In this deed only, as a certaine writer saith, shewing himselfe a man. Afterwards these two rulers diuided the Monarchy betwixt them, *Belochus* was made King of *Babylon*, and *Arbaces* of the *Medes*. Thus *Sardanapalus* was the last king in that course when that Monarchy had stood 1300. yeares, for almost all their Kings liued exceeding long.

The Monoatchy diuided.

After it had stood 1300 years

Belochus. 2 King. 15. 1 Chron. 5.

Belochus the nine & thirtieth, or if it seeme better, the first King of the *Assyrians* in the new Monarchy, compelled *Manasses* King of *Israel* to pay him Tribute: the Scripture calls him not *Belochus* but *Phul. Phul Assur*, surnamed *Tiglath Pileser*, succeeded him He tooke some certain Cities in *Iudea*, and caried away the people captiue into *Assyria*. *Achas* King of *Iuda*, in whose time

Phul Assur. 2 King. 15. 2 Chro. 28.

time the Prophet *Iſaias* liued, deſir'd aid from this *Tiglath* againſt the King of *Syria*, and ſent him preſents. After *Tiglath* followed *Salmanaſſar*, who after three yeares ſiege, tooke the Citie of *Samaria*, and caried away captiue *Hoſea* King of *Iſrael*, and his people, and allowed them a dwelling place in his owne Dominions euen amongſt the *Medes*, as the Scripture ſaith, whereupon ſome gather that hee rul'd alſo ouer the *Medes*. His ſucceſſor, *Senacherib* kept his Court in the City of *Niniuie*: Hee made *Ezekiah* King of *Iuda* tributary to him, and ſoone after beſieged *Ieruſalem* with a mighty Army, and by his Ambaſſadors exhorting the people to make a reuolt: and ſcoffed at their King, who hoped for helpe from his God. But he eſcaped not vnpuniſht, for God by his Angell in one night

Salmanaſſar.

2 King. 18.

Senacherib.
2 King 18.

2 King. 19.

night slew 185000. of his men, as a litt e before he had confirmed it to *Ezechias* b his Prophet *Isaiah*. After his returne home, hee was slaine by his owne sonnes. Till this time, the *Babylonians* after *Sardanapalus* his ouerthrow, were in subiection to the *Assyrians*, *Senacherib*, as we said before, hauing receiu'd such a destruction at *Ieruſalem*, and not long after slaine by his owne sons: there followed a great change in the State of the Kingdome, which was then diuided. For the two brothers *Adramalech*, and *Sarazar*, who had committed the parricide fled. Notwithstanding they leuied forces, and prepared Armes against their brother *Assaradon*, who after his fathers death had seized vpon the Kingdome: hauing formerly gouern'd the Common-wealth in his fathers absence. *Merodach* Gouernour

Isa. 37.

Iob 1.

Assaradom 2 Kin. 19.

pIsa. 37. *Merodach.*

nor of *Babylon* taking hold on this faire occasion, for his own good successe, reuolted, proclaiming warre: and hauing by degrees, partly by fauour, partly by force, drawne in the neighbouring countries round about him, to his party, and ouercome *Assaradon* in the 12. yeare of his raigne: annexed the whole Empire of the *Assyrians* to the *Babylonians*, and raigned [q] forty yeares after. Many reckon, next after him, *Benmerodach*, and *Nabuchadonozor* the first of that name: but seeing the holy Scripture discouers nothing hereabouts: nor can we rashly giue credit to others, wee'le ranke that *Nabuchadonozor* whom the Scripture makes much mention of, next in order after *Merodach*. Hee therefore within few yeeres after his entrance, made warre with the [r] *Ægyptians*: and tooke from them the whole Coun-

2 Kings 20. 2 Ch 32.

[q] Isai. 39 & 50 *Benmerodeach. Nabuchodonozor.*

Nabuchodonozor the Great.

[r] 2 Kin. 24. Ieremi. 46.

Countrey there from *Euphrates* to [f]*Peleusium*, made tributary to him [t] *Ioachim* King of *Iuda*, and in the eight yeare of his raign caried away captiue to *Babylon*, his sonne *Iechonias*, together with his chiefe men, and artificers, not onely of the City of *Ierusalem*, but also of the whole Countrey. In the eighteenth yeare of his raigne he tooke **Ierusalm*, after two yeares siege, & within a while after [u] sackt, burnt it & broke downe the walls, caried away most part of the people, putting out king *Zedekias* his eies, and killing his sons, and Noblemen. The Prophet *Ieremy*, had foretold this calamity in the first yeare of *Nabuchodonozors* raigne: and from this time we must reckon the 70. yeares captiuity of *Babylon*. *Nabuchodonozor*, about the foure and twentieth yeare of his raigne (hauing ouercome the kings of the

[f] *Suidas*, cals this *Peleusium*, the Key of *Egypt*, It is now called *Damietta*.

[t] 2 Kin. 24.

[u] 2 King. 25. 2 Chro. 36

[u] Ierem. 52.

Ierem. 25.

the [x] *Ammonites*, and *Mobites*) passed into *Ægypt* with an army: where hauing got possession of all that Countrey, afterwards begun his Monarchy. In the second yeare of his Monarchy, as the learned of our times collect, he saw in his dreame a great Image, whose head was of gold, the brest and armes of siluer, the belly and thighes of brasse, the legges of iron, the feet part of iron, part of clay. When hee awakt, and could not call to mind what he had dreamt, but yet remain'd mightily astonisht, calling together his Magicians and soothsayers, charged them vnder paine of death to interpret his dreame. *Daniel* a yong man Captiue with the rest of his Nation, brought thither from *Ierusalem*, signified that he could satisfie the kings desire: being brought forth, first hee shewed what the dreame

[x] Ier. 46

dreame was, and afterwards interpreted the meaning thereof. The Image sayd hee, signifies the foure chiefe Monarchies of the world, which are to succeed in order, and turning his speech to the King himselfe; Thou, sayd hee, whom God hath inuested with supreame power and glory, to whom he hath giuen rule ouer all men, beasts of the field, fowles of the ayre; Thou I say art the Golden Head of that Image. After thee another kingdome of siluer shall arise, worse then this of thine: afterwards the third kingdome of brasse which shall beare rule farre and wide: but the fourth kingdome shall be of yron, for as yron breaketh in peeces and subdueth all things, so also shall the fourth and last, breake in peeces all the rest, and bring them in subiection to it. This therefore is the first and formerly neuer heard

heard of propheſie, of the foure Monarchies, which God reuealed to vs by his Prophet *Daniel*. A thing truly worthy to bee committed to memory, becauſe in a few words it compriſes the hiſtory of all ages, vntill the end of the world: as afterwards I am to ſpeake of. Now it ſufficeth how at this time firſt of all, God hath diſcouered to vs, the order and ſucceſſiue courſe of the Monarchies. That place in *Daniel* alſo, manifeſts more clearely of what great puiſſance this *Nabuchadonozor* was: where the Scripture compares him to a Tree, whoſe height reached to heauen, which, as it were ouerſhadowed the whole earth: whoſe leaues were very faire, and moſt abundantly loaden with fruit, whereby all creatures were fed and fatned: in whoſe braches and boughes, all manner of fowles dwelt and made Dan. 4.

made their nests. This therefore is the first Monarchy: wch, as it was exceedingly amplified in this Kings raigne and hoysted vp to the very highest steppe: So also it fell away and in his Nephewes time was quite extinguished, euen as God had denounced by *Daniel*, and other of his Prophets. This *Nabuchadonozor* raigned three & forty yeares. It would quite the cost if all mortall men, especially Kings and Princes, would reade and diligently consider, with how dreadfull a spectacle and example, God (as *Daniel* set sit downe) reuenged his pride: that so they might the more reuerence Gods diuine Maiesty, and performe that office to the people, wch is committed to them. His son *Euilmerodach* succeeded him, he raigned 30. yeare, and his successor *Assur* three yeares. *Labassardach*, who raigned seauen

Dan. 4. and 5.

Euilmerodach. 2 King. 25. Ierem. 51.

Assur.

Labassardach.

yſeuaen yeares, ſucceeded him. After him *Balthaſar* bore rule fiue yeares: Many reckon them after this manner, but the learned of our time, omitting two of them, put *Balthaſar* next after his father *Euilmerodach*, & write that he raign'd 14. y. wch is very neceſſary to make the perfect number of 70. yeares, during which ſpace the *Iewes* were in captiuity to the *Babylonians*: ſithence their captiuity begun in the nineteenth yeare of *Nabuchodonozors* raigne. Thoſe who obſerue this order and leaue out the two Kings before ſpoken of, follow the Tract of Scripture, and eſpecially the Prophet *Ieremies* teſtimony, who prophesied that the *Iewes* ſhould ſerue the King of *Babell*, his ſon, and his ſons ſon, but in this point let euery man haue his iudgement free to himſelfe. Howbe it *Balthazar*, as the Scripture

y *Metaſthenes*; and others ſay but 6.

Balthazar.

Ierem. 25.

ture mentions, was the last King of the *Babylonians*, and in this all Writers agree. As for the manner of the taking of *Babylon*, many Authors describe it. *Daniel* also mentions how God denounced to this King, his imminent and euen present calamity, and relates how the gouernement of the Monarchy, after that King was slaine, was translated to *Darius* the *Mede*, then 62. yeeres of age. Many writers call this *Darius*, *Cyaxes*, who was the son of *Astiages*, eight King of the *Medes*, whom *Daniel* cals *Assuerus*, who hauing no issue male, bestowed his daughter in marriage vpon *Cyrus* the King of *Persia's* sisters sonne: and being prouokt to enter into a warre with the King of the *Assyrians*, sent for ayd to *Cyrus*, who leading his forces thither, and being made Generall of the whole army, returned

Dan 5.

Dan. 5.

Darius.

Dan 9.

returned conquerour, hauing taken that moſt powerfull [z] City. It is recorded that *Darius* liued not aboue a yeere after this victory. And then, when *Darius* was yet liuing after the taking of *Babylon*, and the children of *Iſrael*, had by this time, remained captiue in *Babylon*, almoſt 70. yeares: God reuealed in more ample manner to *Daniel*, according to his prayers in that behalfe, who made knowne the ſame to the Prophet *Ieremy*, foreſhewer of the captiuity: and did not onely confirme the nearneſſe of their freedome, but alſo ſhewed what time the Meſſias ſhould come, who ſhould ſatisfie for the ſinnes of men.

[z] *Babylon.* Dan. 9.

Ier. 25. and 29. Dan. 9.

After *Darius* his death, the ſway of gouernment was committed to his ſonne in law *Cyrus*, and this is the beginning of the ſecond Monarchy; for now *Cyrus* alone held in his

Cyrus founder of the ſecond Monarchy of the *Perſians*, when the firſt of the *Aſſyrians*, had ſtood about 1538 yeares, this was about 3434.

owne hands, *Assyria*, *Media* and *Persia*, euen to the Ionian sea, as *Thucidides* hath it; hauing before his winning of *Babylon*, taken *Crasus* that most puissant King of *Lydia*. So this *Cyrus* is first King of the *Persians*, and founder of the second Monarchie. This most renowned Prince, hauing vanquisht the *Babylonians*, made warre with the *Scythians*, whither going with his armie, and at length intrapped and inuironed by his enemies, was there slaine. In the beginning of his raigne, after the taking of *Babylon*, hee permitted the *Iewes* to returne home againe out of captiuitie, that they might re-edifie the Temple and the Citie of *Ierusalem*; and to that purpose bestowed very liberally out of his owne Treasurie. God by his Prophet *Isai*, had foretold him by name, some ages before he was borne.

2 Chro. 39

Isa. 44. and 45.

Xenophon

Xenophon brings him in, diſcourſing with his ſons before his death, about the immortality of the ſoule, as *Cicero* hath it, who interprets that place, as all others, very elegantly. *Cyrus* reached the 70. yeare of his age, and raigned 30. yeares. being 40. yeares old at the beginning of his raigne. His ſonnes name was *Cambyſes*, whom, when hee went from home to the Schythian warre, he ſet ouer his kingdome. Hee (his Father being abſent and in imploiments) tooke *Egypt*. In warre indeede hee was renowned, but otherwiſe vicious, and did not repreſent his Fathers vertues. Among the reſt of his filthy and ſauage deeds, he commanded his own brother to be ſlaine trecherouſly. *Plato* in his bookes, which he writ of the Lawes, reports how *Cyrus* was very much to blame, for that he brought vp *Cambyſes.*

his ſons effeminately, amongſt women: who, when they grew into riper yeeres, being corrupted by flatteries, for the moſt part abuſing their eares; did, after their Fathers deceaſe, indanger one anothers life.

Darius the ſonne of *Hyſtaſpis* ſucceeded *Cambiſes*, ſecond King of the *Perſians*, who ſuruiued his Father but a ſhort ſpace. And by reaſon that many of his ſubiects, and together with the reſt, the *Babylonians* did (after *Cyrus* his death, and ſo great an ouerthrow of his army) reuolt from the kingdome of *Perſia*: Hee tooke armes at the firſt ſteppe of his raigne, and reunited them to his Empire, hauing after a long ſiege, taken *Babylon* alſo by helpe of *Zopyrus*. Within a while after, he made warre againſt the *Athenians*, who vpon a ſodaine, muſtering vp their

Darius the ſonne of *Hyſtaſpis*.

a He mangled himſelfe, cutting off his eares, noſe, and lippes, faigning that *Darius* had ſo puniſht him, for ſpeaking in the *Babylonians* behalfe, whereupon they receiued him, and by that policie, hee got the Citie for *Darius*.

their forces, not expecting any ayd from the *Lacedemonians*, did at *Marathon*, with about 10000. men, *Militiades* being their Leader, ouercome his huge [b] army. *Darius* was a-minded to renew the warre, but death preuented him, in his very first attempt: whose sonne and successor, *Xerxes* in the tenth yeare after the battell at *Marathon*, as *Thucidides* relates, came with an [c] innumerable army, with intent to subdue all Greece. Hereupon the chiefe managing of these warres, was by common consent committed to the *Lacedemonians*, becaufe they bore greatest sway all ouer *Greece*: but the *Athenians* followed *Themistocles* his counsaile, quitting their Citie, leauing their wiues and children in one place or other, betooke themselues to their shippes, and ioyning battell with the

b It consisted of 600000. men. *Xerxes*.

c Some confine it to 1000000 but *Iustine* extends it to 2000000 in *Herodotus* to more.

enemie at *Salamina*, ouercame him. That victorie was very commodious to all *Greece* in generall, for *Xerxes* being also expelled their Country, did by an infortunate and a dishonourable flight, returne home, and the *Grecians* likewise after his departure. But the *Athenians* hauing a Nauie of 400. saile, or thereabouts, coasting on further, and pursuing their enemies, tooke the towne of *Sestos* vpon *Hellespont*, which the *Persians* held: and there wintering, afterwards returned home, gathered together their dispersed wiues and children, and repaired the walls of their City (which the enemie burnt when hee tooke it) and fortified the Port. This warre of the *Persians*, or (as *Thucidides* calls it) of the *Medes*, happened, as *Cicero* writes, almost at the very same time, with the *Volscian* warre, where the

In a little Fishers boat.

the exild Romane *Coriolanus* was Generall: and that was in the 266. yeare after the building of *Rome*. *Herodotus*, before *Thucidides*, writ of this *Persian* warre. *Cicero* cals him the Father of history, but reports that his writings are stuft with an infinite company of fables. The *Lacedemonians* were sore offended at this fortification of the *Athenians*, but sith they could not tell how to amend themselues, buried all in murmuring silence: and both they, as also the rest of the *Grecians*, together with the *Athenians*, ioyned forces, tooke the Ile of *Cyprus*, and the City [d] *Bizantium*, which the *Persians* held.

[d] Now called *Constantinople*.

Among the rest of the *Lacedemonian* Captaines in this warre, *Pausanias* was one, who (being condemned of treason) after he was returned home, and lay besieged in a

certaine Sanctuary, was famished to death with hunger. *Themistoles* also (being in like manner accused) fled. Soone after this, *Greece* was tossed vp and downe with sundry wars and dissentions, partly forraigne and partly domesticall, which *Thucidides* pithily relates. But at length, in the fiftieth yeare after *Xerxes* departure out of *Greece*, as *Cicero* reports it after *Thucidides*, that cruell warre sprung out when the whole Country of [e] *Peloponnesus* conspired against the *Athenians*; *Pericles*, *Anaxagoras* his scholler, being their Leader in that warre; who, as *Aristophanes* reports, lightened, thundred, and set all *Greece* on fire with his tongue. For these in times past, were the masterpieces of prowesse and eloquence. On the other part, *Archidamus* King of the *Lacedemonians* had supreame command.

e Now called *Morea*.

mand. *Thucidides* who writ of this warre, was both equall to, and emulous of *Perieles*. *Sophocles* the tragicall Poet, was, as *Cicero* writes, *Pericles* his collegue in the Generalſhip.

Now let vs returne to *Xerxes*. He, by reaſon of ſuch his bad ſucceſſe, being growne into contempt, was ſlain by his own ſubiects. His ſonne *Artaxerxes Long-hand* ſucceeded him. To him fled the exiled f *Themiſtocles*, whom we ſpake of a little before, and there ended his life, & was buried at *Magneſia*. After *Long-hand*, *Darius Nothus* raigned, who married his owne ſiſter. In the beginning of this Kings raigne, happened the aforeſaid *Peloponneſian* warre. And the *Athenians*, though they had remora's enough beſides, yet in the fourth yeere of this warre, as *Thucidides* recites in his third booke, they ſent a Nauie into

Artaxerxes Long-hand f reoyſoned himſelfe, becauſe he would not goe with *Artaxerxes* to fight againſt his owne Country.

Darius Nothus.

Sicile vnder pretence to ay
the *Leontinians*, againſt the *Sy-*
racuſans, but their intent wa
to bring that Iland vnder thei
ſubiection, that ſo they migh
more conueniently ſubdue
Greece, and afterwards whe
they were returned, and foſte
red their owne actions, *Her-*
mocrates of *Syracuſa*, was th
firſt that mooued the *Sicilian*
to liue in peace, laying aſide a
grudges, for the *Athenian*
had laid ſnares of bondage, t
intrappe the liberty of thei
whole country; and his perſwa
ſion tooke effect. this was i
the ſeauenth yeare of thi
warre.

Three yeares after this, th
Athenians and *Peloponneſians*
concluded a truce for fifty
yeares, but it held not full ſe-
uen: for euen then many out-
rages were broached, and
though the peace were no
quite aboliſhed, and gappes o
offences

offences committed, were euer anon ſtopt vp againe by truces; yet in the 17 yeare, they burſt forth againe into open warre with full forces, & this ſecond warre continued tenne yeares. Then the *Athenians* ſend ouer againe their Nauie, moſt exquiſitely furniſhed, into *Sicilie*. The chiefe Commanders, whereof among the reſt, were *Alcibiades* and *Nicias*. *Nicias* very earneſtly (declaiming certaine Orations to that purpoſe) diſſwaded them from this voiage: but *Alcibiades* perſwaded the contrary. The *Peloponneſians* gaue ayd to the *Sicilians*: at length, the *Athenians* incounter with their enemies in the Port of *Syracuſa*: but after a doubtfull and dangerous battell, were all of them put to flight and ſlaine. In the meane time, the *Lacedemonians* and their confederates, conclude a league againſt the *Athenians* with

with *Darius* King of *Persia*. *Tissaphernes* was *Darius* his Ambassador. Next after, *Cadrus*, *Polydor* of *Sparta*, and *Aristomenes* of *Messene*: these following are for the most part reputed the chiefe and most renowned Captaines of the Greekes: some whereof performed worthy seruice for the whole Country of *Greece*, and euery one for his owne country at the least: as, *Miltiades*, *Leonidas*, *Themistocles*, *Pericles*, *Aristides*, *Pausanias*, *Xantippus*, *Leotychidas*, *Cimon*, *Conon*, *Epaminondas*, *Leosthenes*, *Aratus* of *Sicyon*, *Philopœmen*. Most of these were at length banished their Countries. *Cicero* describes the Port of *Syracusa*, and reports how the *Athenian* Nauie onely, which consisted of 300. ships, did within mans memory, inuade it, and was vanquished and ouerthrowne within the same, by reason of the

the aduantage in the ſcituation and nature of the place, and port it ſelfe: and then firſt of all was the puiſſance of that City borne downe, abated and ouerwhelmed, and ſhipwracke was made of Nobility, Gouernement and Glory. *Thucidides* relates, that the circuit of *Sicilie* is as much as a great veſſell can ſaile round about in eight dayes ſpace: and that the Iland is diſtant from the Continent, about twenty 8 furlongs.

g Two miles and a halfe.

Darius had two ſonnes, *Artaxerxes Mnemon*, and *Cyrus*; the firſt whereof ſucceeded his father, and *Cyrus* gouerned *Ionia*: but not being content with his owne ſhare, made warre vpon the King his brother, and was there ouerthrown and ſlaine. *Marcus Portius Cato*, as *Cicero* hath it, cals this *Cyrus* the yonger King of *Perſia*, a man of an exellent wit, and

Artaxerxes Mnemon

and the glory of his Kingdome. Hee commends him also for his delight in husbandry as *Xenophon* writes of him: for this *Xenophon* was one of his souldiers, and very familiar with him, and for that cause was afterwards driuen into exile by the *Athenians* who were in league and amity with *Mnemon*. After *Mnemon* raigned *Ochus*, his third and youngest sonne. *Darius* the last of all succeeded. Against him, *Alexander*, King *Philip* of *Macedon* his sonne, made warre: who after hee had subdued *Thebes* and pacified *Greece*, set forwards into *Asia*, & in three battels ouerthrew *Darius*, taking his mother, wife, and daughters; prisoners. *Darius* offered him very large conditions, and part of his kingdome to the riuer of *Euphrates*: but hee refused both, and ceased not, till hee had ouerthrowne him

Ochus.
Darius.

him: for when *Darius* ſaw that hee could not make his peace vpon theſe conditions, hee renewes the war the third time, and comming againſt him with a moſt puiſſant Army was the third time ouerthrowne, and as he fled, ſlaine by his owne men: when, together with him, the Monarchy of *Perſia*, which had ſtood 200. yeares was extinguiſhed.

Alexander by theſe famous victories, brought vnder his ſubiection almoſt all the countries lying Eaſtward, tranſlated the Imperiall ſeat out of *Aſia*, into *Europe*, and founded the third Monarchie. After this, he made warres in *India*, but, ſuch is the weakeneſſe of mortall men; thoſe blaſts of ful-handed and indulgent fortune, could not breath vpon him, but muſt needes puffe him vp with ambition: when hauing played many inſolent prankes, and in a

The third Monarche of the Greekes founded by *Alexander* the great about 3609. after the *Perſian* Monarchy had ſtood about 200 yeares.

a manner commanded diuine worship to be giuen him: comming to *Babylon* there died of a scauer, or (as many write) of poison, being 33 years of age, and hauing raigned 12 yeares. *Calanus* an Indian, as *Cicero* relates, foretold him of his death, whom, as he was going to be burnt, *Alexãder* asked if he had any thing to say, O yes, quoth he, I shall see thee ere it be long. Within a few dayes after *Alexander* breathed his last, which was (as it is commonly taken) in the hundred & fourteenth [i] *Olympian*, & in the foure hundred and ninth yeare after the building of the City of *Rome*, which is 322. yeares before the birth of Christ. He was a very deuout louer of good Arts, & most liberall towards learned men: & is therefore highly extold in many of their workes. He delighted much in *Homers* Poems,

b He caused himselfe to be burnt, following the ancient custome of the chiefemen of his Nation.

i Games in honor of Iupiter celebrated euery fift yeere: they begun *Anmund* 3186

k Most authors (as *Meibomius* notes) agree that he dyed in the 429 y. after the building of *Rome*.

ems, and though we reade that hee was neuer without many learned men about him to record his acts: yet when hee stood before *Achilles* his tomb in *Sigeum*: O happy young man, sayd he, that hast found such an Herald as *Homor* to proclaime thy vertues. For as hee would (rather then any others) haue *Apelles* his [l] Pictor, and *Lysippus* his [m] Fictor; so would hee haue his worth extold and commended to the memory of posterity, by such, as in setting forth his glory, could purchase renowne to their owne wits. He imployed his Tutor *Aristotle*, about describing the nature of all liuing creatures, and for that purpose procured certaine thousands of men, throughout *Greece* and *Asia*: as Graziers, Huntsmen, Fishermen, Fishmongers, Fowlers, & many more such like, to giue him information of each creature.

[l] Painter.
[m] Statuist.

creature. It's written that hee gaue to the Author himselfe in recompence of his labour, 300 Talents, which amounts as the learned of our time collect, to 1480 Crownes. Hee sent *Xenocrates* the Philosopher 50 Talents, by his Ambassador, which comes to 1030 Crownes: which when hee refused and sent him word backe againe by his Ambassadors that he had no need of so much money: *What*, said he, *has he no friends whom he may benefit by them?*

In his tender yeares, when he was *Aristotles* scholler, hee was, as *Cicero* writes, endued with a most excellent wit, and exceeding great modesty, but afterwards aduanced with the title of King, he grew proud, cruell and deboist. Historiographers tell wondrous stories of *Darius* his gorgeous pompe, delicious pastimes, and riotous excesse: For hee kept within his

his Tents Cookes of all kinds, Huckſters, crammers of fowle, Artificers, clerks of his kitchin, and Confectioners: leaſt hee ſhould bee vnprouided of any meanes that might increaſe his bodily pleaſure. Many writers ſpeake of the Kings of *Perſia* their ſolemnities and ſumptuous prouiſion in their daily banquets elſewhere. They were wont to keepe many wiues as *Cicero* writes, and to thoſe they gaue certaine cities, that ſuch a city ſhould find ſuch a woman with all manner of attire for her head, and ſuch a City with this or that apparell. Such was *Darius* his end, as I formerly recited, who as hee fled from *Alexander*, drinking foule water polluted with dead corpes: denyed that euer in all his life he drunke a more pleſant draught: for he neuer drunk when he was athirſt, before that time.

After

After *Alexanders* death, his ſpacious Empire was diuided amongſt his Nobles, *Ptolemeus*, *Laomedō*, *Antigonus*, *Caſſander*, *Leonatus*, *Eumenes*, *Python*, *Lyſimachus*, *Antipater*, *Meleager*, *Seleucus*: but the chiefe of thoſe was *Seleucus*, afterwards made King of *Syria*, as alſo *Ptolemeus* of *Egypt*, *Antigonus* of the leſſer *Aſia*, and *Caſſander* of the *Macedons* & *Greece*, hauing quite cut off all *Alexanders* alliance. This *Lyſimachus* is hee, whom *Alexander* being one time angry with, cauſed to bee ſhut vp wth a Lion: but when he heard how hee had killed the beaſt, highly eſteemed of him. Now moſt grieuous warres, as it is common, aroſe betwixt thoſe forenamed ſucceſſors and their ſonnes and Nephewes: for the mind once corrupted wth ambition can admit no reſt, but plots how to augment its own power, by committing iniury vpon

vpon other men. And all theſe Countries being moſt miſerably afflicted with thoſe warrs, by reaſon they were continuall, by little and little grew into ſubiection to the *Romanes*, who extending their dominions farre and wide, made vp the fourth and laſt Monarchy, whereof I am now to ſpeake.

But amongſt *Alexanders* ſucceſſours in the Kingdome of *Ægypt*, *Ptolomeus Philadelphus* was one, a moſt laudable Prince: For hee, as much as in him lay, kept peace with all, ſtirred vp the liberall ſciences, appointing ſtipends for ſchollers, erected a moſt copious Library, and commanded the books of *Moſes*, and the Prophets, to be tranſlated into the Greeke tongue.

The beginning of the city of *Rome* therefore, was at that time when *Salmanaſſer* before mentioned, raigned in *Aſſyria*, that

that is in the first yeare of the seauenth *Olympiad*, according to *Plutarch*, and of *Rome* built 3212. when as, almost 400. yeares before, *Æneas* had begun his raigne in [n] *Latium* after the *Troian* warres, which *Homer* left to the memory of posterity: of whose [o] time, as likewise of his [p] country, there is no certainty extant: onely *Cicero* writes that many yeares before the building of *Rome*, and *Romulus*, there was such a man. Howsoeuer, there is no prophane writing of more antiquity then his Poem: for as *Horace* saith;

Many braue Worthies
flourisht ere those dayes,
When Agamemnon *shin'd,*
whose booteleſſe praiſe
Hath not the force
t'attract one liquid eie:
For laſting night
with blacke obſcurity,

In

Rome built 3212.

[n] A part of *Italy*.

[o] *Herodotus*, *Dion*: *Halicarnaſſ*. *Solinus*, and *Gellius* (as *Meibomius* notes) writeth of his time.

[p] *Gellius* also writes of his Countrey.

In ignorance inuelopt
hath their names,
Wanting an Herald
to proclaime their fames.

Cicero also signifies as much, who writes that there was not the tract of an Orator to bee seene before *Homers* time.

As for the originall of *Rome*, it was but meane and in a manner contemptible, but because God had so ordained as afterwards it shall be declared, it grew vp to the height of potency. In their first beginning seauen Kings raigned ouer them, 244. yeares. And in *Seruius Tullus* the sixt Kings raigne, *Solon* and *Pisistratus* flouriſht in *Athens*, and *Pythagoras in Italy*, as *Cicero* writes. At what time *Tarquinius* the proud was expell'd. He writes also that in this *Seruius Tullus* his raigne, *Athens* had then stood about 700 yeares. Hauing

uing expell'd their Kings, the gouernement of their State was tranſlated to two Conſuls, whoſe office was annuall. The firſt was *Lucius Iunius Brutus*, one no leſſe vehement and diligent about expulſion of the Kings, and ſetting vp the liberty of his Countrey, then vigilant and valiant in preſeruation thereof. For when his owne two ſonnes, *Titus* and *Tiberius*, amongſt other Noblemens ſonnes of *Rome*, had commun'd together in priuate conſultations, about calling in againe of the *Tarquins*: after the matter was openly diſcloſed, he put them to open death. Hee alſo abrogated his Colegue *Tarquinius Collatinus* his authority, who was his aſſociate in expelling of the Kings, as alſo coadiutor in his counſels. *Cicero* defends this fact as iuſt, and ſayth it was no leſſe profitable then honourable to his

his Country, that thereby both the name of the *Tarquins*, and the remembrance of the Kingdome might bee extinguished. But in this variable fortune of the *Romans*, when all [p] *Hetruria* had conspired against them, three hundred of the [a] *Fabies* marched out of the Citie against the enemie, and were all slaine, saving a childe which was left at home, and so left alive: who afterwards raised the house againe: this happened in the thirty three yeere after the expulsion of the Kings. By reason of the troublesome state of the Common-wealth, Ambassadours were sent into *Greece*, in the three hundred yeere after the building of the Citie, to fetch from thence, the lawes, which the Citie of *Rome* should vse. After their returne the forme of gonernement of the Common-wealth,

[p] *Tuscanie.*

[a] 306. as *Liuie, Florus, Ouid, &c.*

was changed, and the r *Decemvirs* were put in authoritie with the gouernement therof, but this order held not full three yeeres: *Appius Claudius*, one of the *Decemvirs*, by his lewdneſſe in violently carrying away a Virgin, daughter to *Lucius Virginius*, a Citizen of *Rome* to ſeruе his luſt: gaue occaſion to the people wholly to ſubuert this order. So the gouernement returned to the Conſuls: but thoſe two: held it but a few yeeres: and then two s Tribunes of the Soldiers were conſtituted with Conſular authoritie: but they before their yeere was out, left off their office, and made roome againe for the Conſuls: and at this time, which was in the three hundred & fifteenth yeare of *Rome* built, *Lucius Quintus Cincinnatus* the Dictator, cauſed *Caius Seruilius Hala*, maſter of the Cauallery. to kill

Spurius

r Tenne Noblemen appointed to gouerne in ſtead of Conſuls.

s Much like our Knight Marſhals at this day.

Spurius Melius, & alſo pluckt downe his houſe, becauſe hee indeauoured by his lauiſh liberalitie of corne in the Citie, to procure the Kingdome. Two yeeres after this, the gouernement was reduced to the Tribunes of the Soldiers, who afterwards were not bipartite, but more were created at one and the ſame time, as the people pleaſed, and the ſtate of the Common-wealth required.

This kinde of gouernment continued almoſt 70. yeeres, and among the reſt in this office, flouriſht *Marcus Furius Camillus*, inferiour to none for valour: who, though hee had done worthy ſeruice, for the Common-weale, yet his ingratefull country, thruſt him out into baniſhment, after hee had beene Tribune of the Soldiers the fourth time: but after hee had recouered the Citie out of the hand of the [t] *Gallia*

[t] Inhabiting in and about *Sen.* in *Gallia*.

Senons, who had taken it, and vanquisht the enemie, was restored to his former dignity, and within two yeeres after made [u] Dictator. A few yeeres after this, *Marcus Manlius*, he that defended the Capitoll against the *Gaules*, being suspected of affecting soueraigntie, was pitcht headlong from the top of the hill *Tarpeium*, and a law made, that no man descending from the stocke of any Senatour of the house of the *Manlies*, should bee called *Marcus*. After this, *Camillus* was the seuenth time created Tribune of the Soldiers, and being very old, ended his life in the 389. yeere after the building of *Rome*: the gouernment being a yeare before his death, againe reduced to the Consuls. The first whereof was a * *Plebeian*. In those times flourisht the most renowned Captaines of warre in

[u] He had power regall, and was neuer chosen, but when the Commonwealth was in great danger, and could not hold his place aboue half a yeere.

* One of the Commaltie,

in that City, ſuch as were *Marcus Valerius Coruinus, Titus Manlius Torquatus, Caius Martius Rutilius, Publius Decius Mus, Papirius Curſor, Publius Philo, Lucius Volumninus,* and others.

One of which, namely, *Titus Manlius Torquatus*, one of the Conſuls, beheaded his owne ſonne, for that hee (contrary to his command, and out of his ranke) had encountred his enemy in a ſingle combat, although hee got the vpperhand. *Publius Decius Aulus* the other Conſull, in the battell againſt the Latines, deuow'd and bequeathed himſelfe to death for the *Romane* Army: when violently ruſhing into the thickeſt troopes of his enemies, by his death, re-eſtabliſhed the tottering ſtate of *Rome*. His ſonne, of his owne name, foure times Conſull, performed the like againſt the

Galli-Senones, forty foure years after that. At the same before mentioned time, in the [x] 420, yeare of *Rome* built, *Alexander* the great, founder of the third Monarchy, as wee haue aboue declared, flourished and made his warres. *Titus Liuius* compares *Lucius Papyrius Cursor* with him, and extending his discourse as well for his owne as his Readers recreation, shews that he was able to haue resisted *Alexander*, if happily hee had led his forces into *Europe*, after his conquest of *Asia*, and made warre vpon the *Romanes*. This before recited *Papyrius Cursor*, was indued with the very quintessence of valour: for, omitting other his valiant acts, when *Titus Veturius Caluinus*, and *Spurius Posthumius Albinus* the two Consuls, together with the whole army at the [y] Forks of *Caudium*, were compelled by the

x Most Authors agree of 10. or 12. yeares before, *viz.* *Anno Mundi*, 3620. or 21.

y Made of speares or liuelings stucke in the ground vnder which the conquered were to passe in dishonour.

the *Lamnits*, to goe ignobly vnder the yoke, and had made a dishonnourable peace with the enemy: He (being created Consull) vanquisht the late conquering enemy, and put him to flight; as also when hee was Dictator, made his owne Master of the Cauallery an example to teach what strict obseruance ought to bee had in military discipline. In this age also, and a little vpwards, *Greece* brought forth men of transcendent learning; for then flourished *Socrates*, and from him, as from a certanie Fountaine, *Aristippus*, *Plato*, *Antisthenes*, *Speusippus*, *Aristotle*, *Dicaarchus*, *Xenocrates*, *Heraclides*, *Theophrastus*, *Polemo*, and *Strabo* all of them Physiologers, and as *Cicero* cals them, Speculators and hunters of Nature. Then also flourished most famous Oratours, as *Gorgias*, *Protagoras*,

Prodicus, *Hippias*, *Isocrates*, *Lysias*, *Demosthenes*, *Hyperides*, *Æschines*, *Phalerius*, *Demetrius*. And Historiographers chiefly, *Xenophon*, whom *Cicero* cals a *Socratist*, and *Calisthenes*, *Alexander* the great his companion.

In this age liued *Dionysius* the *Syracusan* Tirant, to whom when *Plato* came and spoke freely concerning the duty of a Prince, hee put him in great danger of his life, as *Cicero* relates. This was hee who committed not the guard of his body, to his allies, but to certaine strangers, and sauage and barbarous people: hee who taught his daughters how to cut their haire, that they should not aduenture their neckes vnder the Barbers hands: who suffered them not to vse any manner of edge-toole, after they were come to yeares, but made them cindge his

his head and beard with red-hot Walnut-ſhels: who reſorted to his wiues often times by night, but firſt made ſure to ſuruey and prie into all places: who not daring to ſhew himſelfe in the common Pulpits, was wont to ſpeake to the people out of a Tower: who ſhewed *Damocles* one of his Parraſites, what manner of felicity that of his was, which he had boaſted of: for as he ſate in the middeſt of his choyſeſt delicates, with abundance and ſuperfluity of all manner of pleaſures; hee cauſed a glittering ſword, hanging by a briſtle of a horſes vpper lip, to bee let downe, that it might hang ouer his necke.

About forty two yeares after *Alexanders* death, *Pyrrhus* King of the *Epirotes* came into *Italy*, and made warre with the *Romans*. In his ſecond yeares warres, he ſolicited the

Senate about concluding of a peace and a league, But *Appius Claudius* both old and blinde, who, as *Cicero* writes, had beene twice Consull before that, came into the Court; and dissuaded the Senate inclining to peace, from making any league with him, for, euen in that case, wherein hee then was, hee had so much courage, as not to shrinke from any either priuate or publike seruice. The Oration which hee then pronounced concerning *Pyrrhus*, when hee brooke off the peace, was extant in *Ciceroes* daies, as he himselfe witnesseth. At this time, *Caius Fabritius Luscinus*, performed a worthy piece of seruice for the Common-wealth, who being solicited by *Pyrrhus*, to reuolt, contemned his most ample giftes, and large proffers: nor onely so, but also sent him backe againe, a certaine captiued

tiued runne-away, who had certified, that hee could take away the Kings life by poiſon. *Cicero* compares him with *Ariſtides* the *Athenian*. *Manius Curius Dentatus*, gaue *Pyrrhus* an vtter ouerthrow, at his ſecond inuaſion of *Italy*, and triumphed ouer him. This *Pyrrhus* was the firſt that euer brought Elephants into *Lucania*. And till this time, (being almoſt fiue hundred yeares continuance) the *Romans* were in warres with the inhabitants of *Italy* onely, amongſt whom the *Latines*, *Veientes*, *Æquies*, *Faliſcians*, *Samnites*, *Hetrutians*, reſiſted very ſtoutly, ſometimes conquered, ſometimes conquering: who being at length ſubdued, and a peace ſetled; that moſt bloody warre againſt the *Carthaginians* ſprung vp; the originall of which City, is by euident teſtimony, prooued to bee farre

more

more [z] ancient then *Rome*. This warre begunne in the foure hundred eighty fift yeare of *Rome* built: In which, that noble act, which hath report of performance by *Marcus Attilius Regulus* deserues singular commemoration, who, being taken prisoner by the *Carthaginians*, and sent by them to *Rome*, to treate of a peace and exchange of prisoners, with condition (except hee preuailed) to returne to his bondage: Hee, when hee came thither, perswaded the Senate the quit contrary way, & shewed that it was repugnant to the custõe of the Common-wealth: but yet holding it a point of honour, to hould promise with his enemy, returned to *Carthage*, where hee was put to death with the most cruell kind of punishment: his eye-lids being cut away, and so bound fast in an engine, consumed

[z] *Iosephus* writes that it was built within 143 yeeres after *Solomons* Temple. The first *Punicke* or *Carthaginian* warre beganne *Anno mundi* 3967.

to death by waking. This warre proceeding, the *Romans* had their first and fortunate sea-fight in *Sicilie*, against *Hanno*, *Publius Dnillius* Consull: *Cicero* rankes this *Diuilius*, *Manius Curius*, and *Caius Fabritius*, as also *Attilius Calatinus*, *Cneius*, and *Publius*, both *Scipioes*, *Aphricanus*, *Marcellus*, and *Fabius Maximus*, within the list of the most renowned Consuls of *Rome*.

The yeare following, *Lucius Cornelius Scipio*, Consull tooke the Ilands of *Corsica* and *Sardinia*. The *Carthaginian* warre, after it had lasted three and twenty yeares, was at last appeased, *Quintus Lutatius*, *Catulus Cercus*, and *Aulus Manlius*, Consulls. Two yeares before this, was *Ennius* borne. Hee was elder then *Marcus Portius Cato*, (who cals him his familiar consort) by fiue yeares. And *Rome* was now

Held 23 yeares.

againe intrapt with new warrs againſt the [a] *Faliſcians*, [b] *Lygurians*, [c] *Illyrians*, [d] *Galles*, [e] *Boies*, [f] *Inſubrians*, who hauing at length ouercome, the ſecond *Punicke* or *Carthaginian* warre burſt forth, in the twenty fourth yeare after the concluſion of peace. *Publius Cornelius Scipio*, and *Titus Sempronius Longus*, then Conſuls. *Hannibal* was Captaine Generall in this warre, who ſack't the City of *Saguntum*, and bending his courſe through *Spaine* towards *Gallia*, and from thence to *Italy*, in three ſeuerall battels, at [g] *Ticinum*, the Riuer *Trebia*, and the Lake *Thraſimine*, ouercame the *Romanes*. But *Quintus Fabius Maximus* being created Dictator. and marching forth againſt the enemy, by *ſubtill and dilatory* withdrawing *from him*, weakened and tooke off the edge of his force and fury.

This

a Of *Tuſcame*.
b Of *Tuſcame* vpon the Sea coaſt.
c *Sclauonians*.
d Of *Gallia* now *France*.
e *Bohemians*
f Of now *Lumbardy*. The ſecond warre which the *Carthaginians* begun, *Anno Mundi* 3751.
g Now *Pauie*.

This was that very *Fabius*, whoſe fame *Ennius* celebrating, ſaith thus of him.

One mans delay, our ſafety hath regained.

Cicero accounts him a great Politician, and ſaies, that hee could conceale, keepe ſilence, diſſemble, inſnare, and preuent, his enemies in their conſultations. But after this, the *Romans* receiued a very great ouerthrow at [b]*Canna*, which ſtruck ſuch an horrid feare in the City, that many of the ablер ſort purpoſed to flie and forſake the City, but were reanimated and withdrawne from their intents by *Publius Cornelius Scipio Publius* his ſonne, a magnanimous yong Gentleman, and then ſcarce foure and twenty compleate.

[b] A towne of *Apulia* in *Italy*.

The fourth yeare following, *Claudius Marcellus* tooke *Syracuſa* after a long continuing ſiege. In the ſacking of which City

Citie, the famous Mathematitian *Archimedes* was slaine: who was drawing certaine Astronomicall figures in dust, not dreaming of the conquest of his country. *Marcellus* hauing notice hereof, tooke his death wonderfull heauily, and commanded his body to be buried: not onely suffering the Conquered Citie to remaine in safetie, as *Cicero* writes, but also left it so furnished, that it should stand for a Monument of victory, humanity, and clemency. Moreouer, as he speakes vpon *Verres* the [i] *Prætors* arriuall there; in this victory of *Marcellus*, there were fewer men, then gods slaine: but *Liuie* reports, that many abhominable examples of wrath, enuy, and auarice were then and there shewed. *Cicero* when he was [k] *Quæstor* of *Sicilia* hauing by some description found out the place of

[i] Much like our Lord chiefe Iustice at this day.

[k] Much like our office of Lord Treasurer.

of *Archimedes* buriall, ſhewed his tomb to the Senate of *Syracuſa*, 137 y. afterwards, though it was quite worne out of memory, growne ouer with briars, and brambles, and vnknowne to the very Citizens themſelues. He further reports that this City of *Syracuſa*, was the greateſt & moſt beautifull city in *Greece*, and that it was compact of foure very great Cities: the Iſland, where was the fountaine of *Arethuſa*, hauing great ſtore of fiſh: *Acradania* where the market place * *Prado*, and * Senatehouſe ſtood: *Tyche*, where the Temple of *Fortune* ſtood: *Neapolis* built laſt of all, where the moſt ſpacious Theater was erected. Moreouer this, of any forraigne Nation, was the firſt, that entred into amity and allegiance with the *Romans*, and was their firſt prouince, as the ſame *Cicero* teſtifies, *Hannibal*, ſoone after his victory,

* *Porticus.* The publike walking place for pleaſure, recreation or exerciſe, * *Curia.*

victory, compelled all *Campania* to bee yealded vp to him: but his Army wintering at *Capua* with superfluity of victualls and riot, became wholy disjoynted and broken. The third yeare after the ouerthrow of *Syracusa* *Capua* was surrendred into the hands of the *Romans*: and it was long and much demurred vpon, whether or no, they should quite destroy the City: at length they agreed to preserue it, yet least it should at any time afterwards, bee able to raise any rebellion, their fields were quite taken away, all manner of authority both of Magistrates and Senatours abrogated, as also the Councell of Estate, no image of a Common-wealth left, but was appointed to bee a store-house for fruit, the plowmens rendezuous, the countrey-mens market towne, and the common Garner and corne-

Cornhouſe for the countrey of *Compania*. Within two yeares after this, *Aſdrubal* brought ouer new Auxiliary Forces into *Italy*: but was ſlaine at the riuer of *Metaurum* by *Marcus Liuius Salinator*, & *Caius Clandius Nero* Conſulls. In the meane while *Publius Cornelius Scipio* had good ſucceſſe in *Spaine*, after his father & his vnkle had loſt their liues there. Hee hauing recouered the whole prouince, returned to *Rome*, and being made Conſull, deſired to bee authorized ouer *Africa*, that he might make war there. But *Quintus Fabius Maximus*, an aged graue Senator withſtood him very earneſtly: and vrged that it was not fit to paſſe into *Africa*, but to ioyne battell with *Hannibal*. *Scipio* contrarywiſe, that if warre were made with the *Carthaginians* within their owne *Quarters*, they muſt of neceſſity, bee con-

constrained to call home *Hannibal* out of *Italy*, in whō they setled their chiefe hopes and helpes. After much dispute the Senate grants *Scipio* the Prouince of *Sicilie*, and permits him, if it might be commodius to the Commonwealth, to passe ouer into *Africa*. Hee therefore at length sets forward out of *Sicile* into *Africa*: where, what hee had foretold the Senate by word, he confirmed by deed. For the *Carthiginians* hauing receiued some ouerthrowes by him, and being much endammaged, call backe *Hannibal*. Thus he who for sixteene yeares together had raged vp and downe *Italy*, and pict out a place vnder the very walles of *Rome*, where to pitch his Tents was compelled to returne home, though sore against his will and to his great griefe: where at length in his owne country quar-

quarrell, hee was vanquiſhed by *Scipio*, who ſoone after, by decree of the Senate, concluded a peace with the Enemie. Hereupon came his ſurname of *Africanus*.

Hannibal vanquiſhed *An. mund.* 3797.

But here we muſt conſider, after what manner the *Romans* crept out of theſe moſt intricat ſtraights, for all their fortune now hung by a moſt ſlender threed; yet ſo it was deſtined, that they ſhould ouerſway all force and trouble, and become Lords of the whole earth. Some report that *Hannibal* foreſaw this, when hee heard of his brother *Aſdrubals* ouerthrow. The words which hee then vs'd, *Horace* ſets them downe, in that Ode, wherein he celebrates the fame of *Druſus* and his houſe; which being moſt learned & elegant, worthily, amongſt other matters, deſerues commemoration by all of the yonger ſort. Thus the

Horace l. 4. *Ode* 4.

The Roman warrs with *Philip* King of *Macedonia*, 3770.

the *Romanes* being at peace with the *Carthaginians*: beſides thoſe warres wherein they were employed, in *Italy*, *Iſtria*, and *Luſitania*: made ſharpe warre againſt *Philip* King of *Macedonia*, who infeſted the Countrey of *Greece*. In this warre *Titus Quintus Flaminius* was Generall, who at length, getting the vpper hand of the Enemy did by decree of the Senate reſtore *Greece*, to its former liberty: and amongſt other iniunctions prohibited King *Philip* from making war in any place, out of his owne Territories, without decree of the Senate. To this warre another ſucceeded, againſt *Antiochus* King of *Syria* who paſſing ouer into *Europe*, was ouerthrowne and expelled *Greece*, by *Manlius Glabrio*, *Philip* King of *Macedon* aiding the *Romanes* in that warre. Thoſe before recited Kings of

The Roman wars with *Antiochus* King of *Syria*, 3777.

Aſia,

Aſia, *Syria*, and *Macedonia*, deſcended from their poſterity, who, as wee haue abone related, diuided the prouinces amongſt them after *Alexander* the Great his death. For *Carthage* being pacified, and all *Italy* brought vnder ſubiection; the *Romanes* hauing ſubdued their neighbouring Countries of *Europe* both by ſea and land, were now grown to that height, that Kings and people farre remote implored their patronage.

After this manner the *Egyptians* (whoſe King *Ptolomy Epiphanes* was, a very young Prince, and not of ability by reaſon of his non-age to gouerne then) being brought into imminent danger by *Antiochus* the Great, ſent ouer their Ambaſſadors to *Kome*, petitioning the Senate to vndertake the tuition of their young King. Hereupon the Senate

Senate enioyned *Antiochus* to forbeare *Egypt*: Hee herea incenſed, but more eſpecially when *Hannibal* who was fled to him and remained his gueſt very earneſtly perſwaded him to the warre: ſtrucke ouer with a Nauie into *Greece*, and there, as wee reported before, was put to flight. Whereupon the *Romans* ſetting forth with an Armado, purſue him, and ſtriking ouer into *Aſia*, ouerthrew in a maine battell, and beat him backe beyond the Mountaine *Taurus*. *Cicero* relates, how after this ouerthrow he was wont to ſay, that the *Romans* had done him a very good turne, for now (being freed from too exceeding great gouernment) hee would conteine himſelfe within the moderate bounds of a Kingdome. *Lucius Cornelius Scipio. Publius Scipio Africanus* his brother, was Captaine Generall

nerall in this warre thereupon surnamed *Asiaticus*.

After this, *Marcus Fulnius Nobilior*, vanquished the *Ætolians*, and triumphed ouer them. And *Publius Scipio Africanus*, after his returne home out of *Asia*, (whither he was sent in Ambassage to his brother in time of this warre) being crost by the [m] Tribunes of the Commons: withdrew himselfe into his village of *Linternum*, and there, this man of transcendent worth, ended his life: being, as many writes, 52. yeares old, of the same age with *Marcus Portius Cato*. In that Dialogue, which *Cicero* writ of old age, hee brings in *Cato* speaking very affectionately and honorably both of his age and studies. but most especially extolling his magnanimity: howbeit *Liuie* writes, that *Cato* was his enemy, and was wont much to

l A certaine people of *Greece*.

m Officers appointed for protection of the Commons against the Nobles.

Slaidan (as *Meibomius* notes) mistakes *Africanus*, for *Quintus Fabius Cunctator* whom *Cicero* speake of.

disquiet himselfe with the odious enuy, that hee bore against him for his fortitude. *Cicero* commends him for his dexterous celerity in dispatch of businesse.

At this time flourisht those Poets, *Ennius*, *Plautus*, and *Neuius*.

After *Antiochus* his ouerthrow, *Hannibal* fled to *Prusias* King of *Bythinia*: and (when the *Romanes* desired to haue him deliuered into their hands) by a draught of poison finished his life.

Hannibal poysoneth himselfe An. 3786.

To *Antiochus*, his sonne *Antiochus Epiphanes* succeeded, who likewise practised by treachery to haue seized vpon the Kingdome of *Egypt*, for that hee was vnkle to *Ptolomy Philometer* King of *Egypt*, who succeeded after his Fathers death; hereupon, professing himselfe to bee the yong Kings Tutor, purposed to dispatch him

him, and so transferre the sway of gouernement into his owne hands, but his plot being discouered, the *Romanes* (whom the *Egyptians* had againe solicited for ayd) sent ouer to him in Ambassage *Caius Popilius*, *Lanas*, who comming to conference with *Antiochus*, commanded him in the name of the *Romans* to depart from *Alexandria*, which hee then besieged: who desiring time to deliberate vpon it; *Lanas* with a little rod drew a circle round about him in the place where hee stood, and in flat tearmes charged him to giue his answer what hee would doe, before hee stirred out of that Ring. Hee, hereat dismayd, and not being ignorant of the puissance of the *Romanes*, promised peace.

Those passages are onely for this purpose mentioned, that it may appeare how the *Romans*,

from these small beginnings, gathered ground step by step, and climbed vp to the highest branch of gouernment. For now their puissance hauing outstript the bounds of *Italy*, made an impression into seuerall Quarters of the world: but a great part of their labour yet remained towards the keeping in together the ponderous burthen of this their Empire, whose circuit contained the chiefest part of the whole world, as hereafter though briefly, Ile declare in order.

Philip King of *Macedon*, he whome I formerly spoke of, taking it very hainously that the *Romanes* had put him to such a straight: was aminded to renew the warre; but being preuented by death. his sonne and successor *Perseus*, hauing beene long before that incensed against the *Romanes*, vndertooke this warre as it were

a

a part of his inheritage: but *Lucius Æmilius Paulus*, the second time Consull, at length ouerthrew him in battell, tooke him, together with his wife, mother, and Children, and led them in triumph, for this cause surnamed *Macedonicus*: and from that time *Macedonia* became one of the Prouinces of the *Romanes*. The yeare next before this, dyed Ennius, aged 70. yeares, as Cicero hath it. Within a few yeares following, Publius Cornelius Nasica, subdued Dalmatia, and not long after the third Punicke or Carthaginian warre begune. For the Carthaginians being impatient of peace and ease, offer violence and hostility to the rest of their neighbours, but more especially to *Massinissa* King of *Numidia*, a confederate and friend of the *Romanes*. The *Romans* being requested

Perseus K. of *Moceconia*, with his wife mother & Children led in triumph at *Rome*, by *Æmicius Paulus*, 3802.

The third *Punick* or *Carthaginian* warre, 3819.

for their ayd, decreed to make warre in the 604-yeare of *Rome* built: but herein they differed in their opinions, whether it were better to raze the City, or preserue it safe: some were of opinion, that it should not bee destroyed, for that, sayd they, *Carthage* being taken away, they should fall into ciuill warres and dissentions amongst themselues: but *Marcus Portius Cato*, vrging the contrary, shewed what danger might hang ouer the Commonwealth of *Rome*, by reason of that City, vnlesse it were quite destroyed, and this his opinion carried it, hee himselfe departing his life in the time of this deliberation, hauing attained to the eighty fift yeare of his age.

Cicero rankes him amongst the ancient Orators, and places him next after *Marcus Cornelius Cethegus*, whom *Ennius* (as

(as hee reports) extolled. Hee alſo further relates, that there were a hundred and fifty of *Catoes* Orations extant, ſtuft with excellent words and matter: and reprehends thoſe of his time for there too much niceneſſe, in not diligently peruſing them. He compares him with *Lyſias* the *Athenian* Writer.

In this third *Punicke* warre, *Publius Scipio Æmilianus*, *Publius Macedonicus* his ſonne and *Publius Scipio Aphricanus* his nephew by adoption: was at length made Captaine Generall. Hee, in the fourth yeare of his warre, begunne by others, after a ſharpe ſiege continuing for certaine dayes, tooke the City of *Carthage*, ſack't it, burnt it, and layd it leuell with the ground thereupon gaining his ſirname, likewiſe ſtiled *Aphricanus*, as hee was, that ouerthrew *Hannibal*, *Carthage* deſtroyed, 3812.

as aforesaid. And this was the period of this most puissant City, which by originall was more ancient then *Rome*, and for worthinesse of Captaines, scarce inferiour to it, having borne rule farre and wide. *Cicero* writes that *Publius Scipio* after hee had taken *Carthage*, restored to the *Sicilians*, those Ensignes & ornaments which the *Carthaginians* had taken from them some yeares before: as also to the *Agrigentines*, that famous brazen Bull, which is reported to bee *Phalaris* the Tyrants, wherein hee was wont, for punishment, to inclose men aliue, and then to set it one fire. This *Phalaris* lost not his life by trechery, as many other Tyrants did, but the whole multitude of the *Agrigentines* fell vpon him. *Cicero* calls *Africa* the tower of all Prouinces. Much about this time, the *Romans* made warre

with the *Achaians* a certaine people of *Greece*, for offring iniury to their Ambaſſadours.

Lucius Mummius Conſull, was Captaine Generall in this warre, who getting the vpper hand in battell, forced all *Achaia* to bee yelded vp to him, and by dercee of the Senate, ſet fire one *Corinth* the chiefe City, and vtterly ſubuerted it: leſt at any time hereafter, being repaired, it might ariſe and lift vp head againe. *Mummius* hereupon was ſirnamed *Achaicus*. About this time alſo one *Viriathus*, (who from a Shepheard grew to bee a Hunter, from a Hunter, to a High-way-thiefe, and afterward, leader of a ſtrong Army) kept the Country of [n] *Luſitania* in poſſeſſion; who for ſome certaine yeares holding play with the *Romanes*, and very oft putting them to the foile, was at length trecherouſly ſlaine: and

[n] Now *Portugal* in *Spaine*.

soone after, *Decius Iunius Brutus* subdued all *Lusitania*, euen to the *Ocean*. In the meane time the *Romans* receiued a great ouerthrow from the *Numantines* a people of *Spaine*: for, refusing to accept of the peace made by *Mummius* the Consull, in regard it was dishonourable, of a new create *Publius Scipio Æmilianus Aphricanus*, Consull, contrarie to the ordinarie course, and to him commit the charge of the warre: who marching forth with an armie, hauing recalled the soldiers, growne more effeminate and impatient of labour, to obseruance of strict militarie discipline, after hee had besieged the citie of *Numantia* some certaine daies, tooke and subuerted it, in the fourteenth yeere after the subuersion of *Carthage*, and of *Rome* built, sixe hundred and twenty. Cicero cals *Carthage* and *Numantia*,

Numantia destroied, 3832.

tia, the two terrours of the Roman Empire.

At this time their aroſe an vproare of the bond-ſlaues in Sicilie: who hauing gathered together great forces, were at length with much adoe repreſſed by Caius Fuluius the Conſull. After this the Romans had warre with Ariſtomius in Aſia: for Attalus King of Pergamos. had by his teſtament made the Romans his heires, but Ariſtomius being allied to him, ſeized vpon that part of Aſia, and defrauded the Romans of the benefit of his Teſtament. Him, Marcus Peperna, Conſull, vanquiſhed and at length tooke priſoner. The yeere following, which was the 625. yeere of Rome built, Scipio Africanus lying at his owne houſe, was in the night time murthered by his owne kinſfolkes, as it was ſuppoſed. Cicro makes relation of

Scipio Africanus murthered 3837.

of his moſt fluent eloquence, is fidelity and integrity: and writes, that albeit the whole City was plunged in depth of ſorrow for his death, yet no man opened his mouth about the cauſe thereof. He reports alſo, that in this yeare, the ſunne was twice doubled. Thus this moſt renowned commander ended his dayes, aged 56 yeares which, as *Cicero* in a moſt ſweet fictitious inuention faignes, *Aphricanus* the elder had forewarned him of. In this age liued *Lucilius*, *Terence* *Pacuuius*, *Accius*, *Licinius*, *Cæcilius*. *Afranius*. *Caius Lælius*, one moſt intimate with Aphricanus, calls this Pacuuius his friend, but Terence his familiar conſort. After this, Fabius Maximus Conſull, in a mayne battell, ouerthrew the [n] Allobroges, [o] Aruerni, and [q] Ruteni, people of Gallia. At the ſame time, Caius Gracchus, Tribune

[n] Of *Sauoy*.
[o] About the Riuer *Roire*
[p] About *Rhodes*.

bune of the ſouldiers, an eloquent man, and defender of the *Agrarian* law, was ſlaine at *Rome*, his brother *Tiberius Gracchus* hauing twelue yeares before loſt his life for the like cauſe. *Cicero* gines both of them commendations for their eloquence: and writes, that *Tiberius* his Orations were not very beautifull ſet forth in words but were acute and full of wiſedome: and *Caius* his brothers, were fitteſt to bee peruſed by thoſe of the yonger ſort, as ſeruing not onely to whet on, but alſo to nouriſh the wit, and hee ſtiles him the moſt witty and moſt eloquent of all the *Romans*.

Gracchus dream't that hee heard his brother *Tiberius* telling him that hee ſhould die of the ſame death whereof he did and as *Cicero* reports, he told it to many before hee was created Tribune of the commons.

Their

The warre with *Iugurth* King of *Numidia* begun, *Anno Mundi.* 3857.

Their lawes are extant, about prouision of corne, replantation of Colonies, ſoldiers rewards for their ſeruice, gouernement of the Prouince, the people ſuffrages about election of Magiſtrates, and of letting to farme King *Attalus* his lands, and the country of *Aſia*. After their Tribunician diſſentions followed that warre, which the *Romans* had with *Iugurtha* King of *Numidia*. It was begunne by *Lucius Calphurnius Beſtia*, Conſull; continued by *Quintus Cæcilius Metellus*, and ended by *Caius Marius* the Conſull, who ſerued in the warres with *Publius Scipio*: For *Bacchus* King of *Mauritania*, *Ingurtha's* confederate, not willing any longer to vndergoe the hazard of warre, deliuered vp *Iugurtha* bound, into *Sylla's* hands, who was ſent ouer to him for that purpoſe by *Marius*. And at this

Ended, 3859.

this very time, which was in the ſixe hundred forty ſeuenth yeere of *Rome* built, was *Marcus Tullius Cicero* borne; being eight yeeres after the birth of that moſt famous Orator *Quintus Hortenſius*. In the time of this Iugurthine warre, the [q] *Cimbrians* and [r] *Tutons*, pierce ſome into *Italie*, ſome into *Gallia*; where hauing very much annoied the *Romans* and in certaine battels, ſometimes ouercomming the Proconſuls, ſometimes their Lieutenants, were at length ouerthrowne and put to the ſword by *Caius Marius*, the foruth time Conſull: the *Teutons* at [ſ] *Aquenſis*, and the *Cimbrians* on the marches of [t] *Inſubria*.

Cicero borne 38.

q Danes.
r Germanes vanquiſhed by *Caius Marius*, 3867.

ſ Aix.

t Lombarde

To this felicitie ſucceeded a new tumult: for certaine people of *Italie*, as the *Samnites*, *Pelignians*, *Marſians*, *Veſtinians*, *Marruſinians*, *Vmbrians* *Pi-*

The *Sociall* war, 3871.

Picentines, *Lucanians*, reuolted from the *Romanes*. At diuers battels, at length they were reduced to ſubiection. In the necke of this, followes another miſchiefe, and a dangerous one to the Commonwealth: for *Mithridates*, King of *Pontus*, expelled *Ariobarzanes* King of *Cappadocia*, and *Nichomedes* King of *Bythinia*, (both friends and confederates with the *Romanes*) out of their dominions: and ſeizing vpon *Phrygia* a Prouince of the *Romanes* broke into *Aſia*.

The warre with *Mithridates*, 3880.

Hereupon the Senate decreed to remedy it by the ſword: but iuſt in the nicke, ſprung vp a faction, ſome requiring *Lucius Sylla* a man of Noble parentage, others *Caius Marius* for their Generall. *Publius Sulpitius* Tribune of the commons, aided *Marius* his party, but *Sylla* hauing command ouer the army, expelled *Ma-*

rius

rius the City; who thus exiled and lurking in the mariſhes about *Minturnæ* not without very imminent danger of his life, in a little Barke, ſtrucke ouer into *Africa*. In *Sylla's* abſence, in the warres of *Aſia*, *Lucius Cornelius Cinna*, conſull, begunne to raiſe an vproare and practiſe new ſeditions: who, after he was baniſhed by his collegue, *Cneius Octauius* and expelled the city, makes freſh head againe, and ioynes with *Caius Marius*; who vpon that occaſion was returned from *Africa*.

Cinna and *Marius* beſiege: and take *Rome* 3882.

Thus hauing contracted their forces, they ioyntly beſiege the City of *Rome*, on that ſide where the village of *Ianiculum* ſtood: when many of the City, ſhewing themſelues not ſo much cowards, as perfidious wretches (no meanes for reſiſtance being left) giuing them entrance, they

they made all places flow with blood and destruction, and forthwith reproclaiming themselues Consuls, in that their office, exercise much cruelty: among the rest *Lucius Cinna* committed that famous orator *Marcus Antonius* to the sword, and *Caius Marius*, did the like for *Quintus Catulus*. *Lucius Sylla* hearing of those hurly-burlies, hauing in a manner recouered all that hee warred for, concluding a peace with *Mithridates* returnes into *Italy*, but *Marius*, seauenth time Consull, dyed before his arriuall. *Lucius Cinna* had for his Collegue *Cneius Papirius Carbo* on their party: who although they opposed *Sylla* with might and maine, were, together with *Marius* his son put to flight: and *Sylla* being now sole Commander, pursued his aduersaties very sharpely, hung out a writ

writ of proſcription, ſels the proſcripts goods, and diſinabled their children of all priuiledge and right of bearing honours in the Commonwealth: and then making himſelfe Dictator, carried all matters according to his owne will, and enfringed the Tribunes authority: and when he ſold the Citizens goods, declared in the publike aſſemblies, that hee ſould nothing but his owne prey. Briefly, it came to that paſſe, that no man without his conſent, could hold either goods, country or life: and with ſuch bitter hatred was he incenſt againſt *Caius Marius*, that he cauſed the reliques of his body to bee ſcattered and ſtrewed vp and downe the riuer [u] *Anio*: and hee himſelfe was the firſt of any Nobleman of the houſe of the *Cornelioes* that deſired to be burnt by fire: it may be fearing

u *Teuero.*

ing leſt the ſame accidēt ſhould befall his owne dead body. *Cicero* relates that *Marius* was ſtrong and valiant, and conſtant in his wrath: but hee taxes *Sylla* of vehemency, and *Lucius Cinna* of cruelty. Hee further ſtiles *Marius* the terror of his enemies, and the hope and help of his Country. *Lucius Sylla* made foure new lawes, againſt forgery, parricide, murther and iniuries. In the time of his Dictatorſhip, *Marcus Cicero* aged 26 yeares, came into the Court, and pleaded *Sextus Roſſius* his cauſe in publike. Before him, theſe Orators were moſt famous, *Quintus Catulus*, *Caius Iulius*, *Marcus Antonius*, *Lucius Craſſus*. In which age, ſaith *Cicero*, the Latine tongue was growne to full perfection in a manner. This age indeede, wherein *Cicero* liued, did moſt of all excell in learning. For to

to let paſſe ſo many and ſo worthy Orators. there were famous Lawiers, and amongſt the reſt *Caius Aquilius Gallus Lucius Lucilius Balbus, Caius, Iuventius Sextus Papirius* who were *Quintus Mutius Scaeuola* the* *Pontifies* Auditors, to whom *Cicero* alſo in his youth, was a retainer- *Publius Seruius Sulpitius* was well neere *Ciceroes* equall, hee was Auditor of the aboue named men: and *Aulus Oſſilius, Publius Alpheus Varus Caius Titus Decius*, the two *Aufidioes, Caius Atteius Pacuvius, Flauius Priſcus*, Cinna, and *Publius Cacilius* were his ſchollers. At the ſame time, with *Sulpitius*, flouriſht *Caius Trebatius* whoſe ſcholler *Antiſteus Labeo* was. *Cicero* extolling the deceaſed *Sulpitius* in moſt ample words, ſayth, That if all who euer in any age profeſſed the law in this City, were gathered

* Chiefe Prieſt about the ſacrifices.

thered together into one place, they were not to bee compared with *Sernius Sulpitius*; for he was experienc'd in point of equity, as well as in strict lawes.

Amongst those who were proscribed *Quintus Sertorius* was one, a man renown'd both for his couragious valour and experience in military affaires. Hee begun a most fierce warre in the further parts of *Spaine*, where ouerthrowing certaine *Roman* Generals, brought many Cities into subiection.

Sertorius his warre 3870.

Hercupon the guidance of this warre, was at length committed to *Cneius Pompeius*: when after many battels, with diuersity of fortune on both sides, at length *Sertorius* was treacherously slaine; and afterwards *Pompey*, being almost the tenth yeare after the beginning of the warre, recouered *Spaine*. About this time

Ni-

Nichodemes King of *Bythinia*, departing this life, made the *Romanes* his heires: But *Mithridates* King of *Pontus*, who formerly in that faction betwixt *Marius* and *Sylla* had ſtrucke a league with *Sertorius*, ſeizing vpon *Bythinia*, with maine forces renewes the war Againſt him *Lucius Lucullus* was ſent with an Army, who when hee was Conſull, had good ſucceſſe in his battells of horſemen; and afterwards being Proconſul, defeating his forces, and recouering *Bythinia*, cauſed him to retire into *Pontus*: and there to *Mithridates* receiuing an ouerthrow in a maine battell, fled to *Tigranes* King of *Armenia*: yet *Lucullus* ſtill following and purſuing him, in ſome few battailes defeated both their forces: but the mutinous diſſentions among the ſouldiars, by ſome craftily rais'd, hindered him

him from fully finiſhing the warre, and bringing home the wiſht ſucceſſe and honour of his victory. For within a while after *Lucullus* being called home, *Cneius Pompey* was made Captaine Generall in that warre: to which ſeruice *Marcus Cicero* alſo was a motioner, hauing made a very elegant Oration to the people in *Pompeyes* commendation. *Lucullus* thus recalled, held his triumph neuertheleſſe, and beſtowed a very ſumptuous banquet vpon the *Romans*: ſoone after this, leauing his Offices in the Common wealth, hee liued at home priuately ſtudying Philoſophie, and erected a moſt copiouſly furniſht Library. In his ordinary table, he was (as at all times els) very ſumptuous and magnificent. *Cicero* makes mention of this Library, and ſayes that he was wont to come thither to cull forth

forth bookes. *Pompey* put *Mithridates* to flight, and purſu'd him very farre. He caus'd King *Tigranes* to yeeld himſelfe ouer into his hands, and ſeeing him abaſed and forlorne in his campe, aduanced him, as *Cicero* writes, and placing the *Diadem vpon his head againe which he had taken from him, vnder certaine cautions commanded him to raigne againe. At length *Mithridates* being beſieged by his owne ſonne *Pharnaces* ſlew himſelfe. That warre which *Pompey* made againſt the Pyrates (which was before hee went againſt *Mithridates*) wonne him much authoritie.

* *Inſignem.*

This warre this appeaſed, preſently another ciuill broile is broached: for *Lucius Catilina* with many more, conſpired the ruine of the Common wealth, but by *Ciceros* ſingular induſtry, (who was then

Consull) his villany was discouered, hee expelled the City, and hauing gathered together certaine bands and troopes of abiect fellowes in *Hetruria*, was in battaile by *Caius Antonius* Consull *Ciceroes* Colleagus ouerthrowne and slaine. *Cicero* euery where amongst his workes, speakes much of the seruice which hee then performed for the common-wealth, and makes relation not onely of the firebrands then seene in the night time, the flaming of the elements, lightenings and earthquakes: but also applies those wondrous prodigies, which hapned when *Lucius Cotta* and *Torquatus* were Consulls, (being two yeares before his Consulship) to this time: when many Turrets in the Capitoll were strucke downe, the Images of the gods ouerthrowne, the statues of the ancient *Heroes* beat downe the

the brazen tables of the Law melted, as alſo the ſtatue of *Romes* builder, *Romulus* in forme of an Infant, gaping and ſucking at the teats of a wolfe, was ſmitten. *Cicero* deſcribes *Catilines* nature and qualities, ſaies, that there neuer was ſuch another Monſter as he vpon the face of the Earth, compoſed of ſuch contrary different and mutually antipathizing appetites and diſpoſitions of nature.

In the time of *Ciceroes* Conſulſhip was *Caius Octauius* borne, and *Iudea* made Tributary to the *Romanes*, after *Cnelius Pompey* had ſurprized the City of *Ieruſalem*. The fift yeare following: *Lucius Piſo* and *Aulus Gabinius* Conſulls, the × *Heluetians* changed their habitation, and leuying mayne forces intended to paſſe thorow the Prouince of *Gallia* into the further parts thereof-

Caius Octauius born 3906,

× Now called *Switzers*,

and there to seat themselues in regard of the fertility of the soile. But *Caius Iulius Cæsar* who was sixe yeeres younger then *Cicero* hauing notice hereof preparing an Armie (the Senate hauing authoriz'd him ouer that Prouince) marcht thither and in pitcht battell vanquished the Enemy and afterwards going out against *Arioui∫tus* King of the *Germanes*, who had annoyed the Country of *Gallia Celtica*, but more especially the *Hednies* confederates with the *Romanes*, ouerthrew him at *Be∫anson*, a Towne of the *Sequans*, not farre from the *Rhyne*. Soone after he brought the whole Country of *Gallia* in subiection to the *Romanes* and forthwith striking ouer the sea into *Brittaine*, conquered it.

Cicero reports that *Cæsar* writ to him out of *Brittain* on the

y That part of *France* betwixt the Riuer of *Seine* & *Garonne*.

z Now *Walloons*: a *Burgundians* inhabiting about the riuer *Seine*

the first day of September, and the Letters came to his hands the eight and twentieth day of the same moneth. When *Cæsar* went into *Gallia*, *Cicero* being molested by *Publius Clodius* Tribune of the Commons departed into exile, first making an Oration to the Gentry and commons, wherein he commended his children and family to their care: and within a few moneths after being called backe by the Senate, (with exceeding great congratulation of the people) made another Oration to the *Romanes*, wherein he rendred thankes to his friends. Afterwards, hee layd the blame on *Lucius Piso*, and *Aulus Gabinius* Consuls, for his banishment, and shewed that by them hee was betrayed, declaiming certaine Orations against each of them, in one whereof, hee counsail'd the Senate to take

from them the Prouinces of *Syria* and *Macedonia*, and not to call backe *Caius Cæsar*, hauing moſt happy ſucceſſe in his warres in *Gallia*, but to continue his authority: whereby he might fully finiſh the warre. Meane while *Ptolemy Auletes* King of *Ægypt* (for his ſlothfulneſſe and cruelty thruſt out of his kingdome) came to *Rome*, and the Senate, at *Cneius Pompeyes* entreaty, reſtor'd him by *Aulus Gabinius*, expelling *Archelaus* whom the people had ordained to be their King.

At length *Gabinius* was adiudged to pay into the common treaſury 10000 Talents, or as ſome of our times ſuppoſe 6000000. becauſe hee had receiued ſo much from *Ptolomy*. And *Marcus Craſſius*, (who had in charge the managing of the *Parthian* warre) hauing paſt ouer the Riuer of *Euphrates*, was ouerthrowne, and ſoone

Euery Talent amounteth to 175 pound ſterling.

ſoone after ſlaine at an enter-view vpon Truce. This was he, who was wont to ſay, that no man was rich, except hee could maintaine an a Army at his owne charge. About this time was *Publius Clodius* ſlaine by *Titus Anaio Milo*; *Cicero* defended *Milo* (*Cneius Pompey* being then the third time and alone Conſull) yet at length he was commanded to go into exile.

a An Army conſiſted of 2400 foot, and 20000 horſe.

The warres with the *Galles* being ended, which was about the eight yeare thereof, that ciuill warre of *Caius Cæſars*, with his ſonne in law *Pompey*, burſt forth. The occaſion whereof was, becauſe *Cæſar* was to be depriu'd of his Conſulſhip, except hee would firſt diſmiſſe his forces, and ſurrender his prouince, but hee was aduiſed that it could no wayes ſtand with his ſafety, to part from his Army: yet hee con-

The ciuill warre betwixt *Cæſar* and *Pompey* begunne 3916.

descended vpon condition, that *Pompey* as well as hee, should yeeld vp his forces: but when that was refused, marching out with his forces with incredible celeritie, hee left *Gallia* and came into *Italy*, where entering into the Country of *Flaminia*, he tooke many townes some by force, othersome by dedition, Vpon notice hereof, *Pompey* and the two Consulls *Caius Marcellus*, and *Lucius Lentulus* flye from *Rome* to *Brundusium*, a Sea coast Towne in [c] *Apulia*: thither marcht *Cæsar*, but before his arriuall, the Consuls had struck ouer the Seas to *Durachium*: and not long after *Pompey* followes them. Now *Cæsar* being preuented by time, not hauing a Nauie in readinesse could not pursue them but returnes to *Rome*, where calling together the Senate, hee makes complaint of his iniuries, and also

[b] Now *Romandisla*.

[c] *Pucll.*

[d] *Durace* in *Macedonia*.

alſo propounded certaine conditions of peace: but being ſleighted off by the Senate, hee marches to [c] *Maſſilia*, where the gates were ſhut againſt him: hereupon rigging his Nauy, hee beſieges it both by ſea and land, and there leauing his Deputies, ſets forward into *Spaine*, where at length hee compels *Petreius* and *Africanus* two of *Pompeyes* Captaines, together with the whole Army, to yeald. Then hee returnes to *Maſſilia*, which City deſpairing of all ayde, preſently yealds to his power: and after hee was made Dictator in his abſence by *Marcus Lepidus* the Prætor, repaires to *Rome* calls an aſſembly, and is created Conſull together with *Publius* Seruilius Iſauricus: ſoone after hauing ſetled the affaires of the City, hee ſtrikes ouer into *Greece*, and at length ouerthrew *Pompey* in *Theſſaly*

[c] *Marſiles.* in *France.*

Pompey ouer. throwne 3921.

in a maine battell, and disbanded him, though his Army farre excceded *Cæsars*. *Pompey* thus put to flight arriues in *Egypt*, *Ptolomy Dionysius Ptolomy Auletes* son, being then King thereof: which *Auletes*, (when he was expelled his Kingdome) *Pompey* had restored by *Aulus Gabinius*, as aforesaid. In regard of which benefit: hee expected aid and protection from that Countrey: but the King being a child, his Nobles (either despising *Pompeyes* fortune, or else fearing some troubles) treacherously kill him. *Cæsar* pursuing *Pompey*, arriues at *Alexandria* with 3200 men, and there first of all had notice of *Pompeyes* death. *Cicero* passing his censure vpon both of them. If in the last war, saith hee, *Pompey* had abated some what from his austere grauity, and *Cæsar* much from his ambition,

And slaine

bition, wee ſhould haue had both a firme peace, and ſome Common wealth left vs.

The King of *Ægypt* was then in warrs with his ſiſter *Cleopatra*. Hereupon *Cæſar* being at *Alexandria*, would haue their controuerſies rather decided by courſe of law before himſelfe, then by ciuill warres amongſt themſelues: becauſe hee was Conſull of *Rome*, and ſome yeares before there was confederacy agreed vpon with *Ptolomy* the Kings father by decree and conſent of the Senate. But the States tooke this moſt hainouſly complaining that their Kings Royall Maieſty was eclipſed, in calling him to ſit in iudgement vpon their controuerſies. Thus incenſed in minde they prepare to make warre againſt *Cæſar*, but he after much danger getting the vpper hand, did not reduce it into the forme

forme of a Prouince: but tollerated *Cleopatra*, and her yonger brother (the King being slaine) to hold the kingdome. From thence marching into *Syria*, and afterwards into *Pontus*, hee put to flight King *Pharnaces Mithridates* his sonne, and setled peace in *Cappadocia*, *Armenia*, *Gallo-Greece*, *Pontus*, and *Bithinia*. Forthwith returning into *Italy*, and so to *Rome* about the middle of Winter, at the Winter * Sun-sted, he strikes ouer from [f] *Lilybeum*, into *Africa*, though warned by a chiefe Soothsayer, not to take his voyage before the end of Winter. *Scipio* and *Cato*, *Marcus Portius Catoes* Nephewes sonnes were fled thither from the battell at [g] *Pharsalia*, and hauing gathered together a great Army, drew King *Iuba*, [h] into confederacy with them. *Cesar* marching thither, ouerthrew

* *Solstitium.*

[f] A towne and promontory in *Sicilie.*

[g] Where *Pompey* was ouerthrowne.

[h] King of *Mauritania*

threw and deſtroyed them all; but *Cato*, (leaſt hee ſhould fall into his hands) killed himſelfe at *Vtica*: which fact *Cicero* defends and ſaith, that it was better for him (whom nature had indued with incredible grauity) ſo to doe, then to behold the face of a Tyrant. This *Cato* was of the ſect of the Stoickes, and would oftentimes maintaine ſtrange opinions in the Senate, as though he were verſed in *Platoes* politickes, as *Cicero* ſaith, and not in the refuſe off-ſpring of *Romulus*. Afterward *Ceſar* repaires to *Rome*, and hauing triumphed ouer *Gallia*, *Egypt*, *Pontus*, and *Africa*, ſet forward to *Spaine*, where he warred againſt, and ſubdued *Sextus Pompeius*. Thus hauing vanquiſhed all his aduerſaries, and ſetled a peace in many Nations farre and wide: in the fift yeare after the beginning of

i Now called *Biſerta* in *Barbarie*.

The fourth Monarchie begun by *Caius Cæsar An* 3925. being 300. yeeres and odde after *Alexander* the Great.

of his ciuill warres, he returns to *Rome*, where after hee had triumphed ouer *Hispaine*, hee assumed the offred title and authoritie of perpetuall Dictator, and swaied the Senate according to his owne will: hee, in a manner hauing the sole bestowing of all honours, and publike offices, conferring them vpon whom he pleased, thereby incurring many mens ill will.

And now the state of the Common-wealth being altered, and the supreame gouernment thereof reduced to one mans principalitie, those conspiracies then in brewing against him, were at length, broached: For, in the fift moneth after his returne to *Rome*, hee was slaine in *Pompeys* *Court-house, on the Ides of *March*, and by those very men, whom by his late shewed kindnesse, hee had obliged to him

Caius Cæsar slaine. *Curia.*

him, as also pardoned them for seruing against him in the *Pompeian* warre. Those were *Marcus*, and *Decius Brutus*, *Caius Cassius*, *Cneius*, *Domitius Caius Trebonius*, *Quintus Tullius Cimber*, two of the *Seruiloes*, *Casca*, *Hala*, and many more. *Marcus Antonius* the Consull, *Cæsars* Collegue, indicted *Cicero* also before the Senate, as guilty of the murther: for that *Marcus Brutus* presently after *Cæsar* was slaine, (holding vp his dagger on high) shouted aloud, and nominated him, congratulating him for recouerie of their libertie.

Many report that *Caius Cæsar* spake to *Marcus Brutus* in Greeke, as hee rushed vpon him, and called him sonne, how they take it, I know not; but it is euident out of *Cicero*, that *Brutus* was fifteens yeers yonger then he.

Caius

Caius Cæsar made diuers lawes, some whereof when hee was Consull, and other some when hee was Dictator, which after his name were called the *Iulian* lawes: as, about distribution of lands, concerning violence, Maiesty, extortion, Priest-ships, vsury. Other lawes there were, which goe vnder his name, but were made by *Octauius*. All commend him for his clemency, and *Cicero* giues him praise for his wit, quickneſſe, reason, memory, learning, prouidence, diligence: but hee stormed grieuously at his authority, yet secretly and in an Epistle to *Atticus*, Thou shalt perceiue, saith hee, that this kingdome can scarce hold halfe a yeare together. But in all those proceedings, *Cicero* carried himselfe very wauering and inconstantly: for during the warre, hee followed *Pompeyes* party,

partie, and his campe, although he reprehended his discouragement of minde and cowardise, and in his Epistles to his friends, hee cals *Cæsar* a warraging Tyrant and monster. But after *Pompey* was put to flight, and slaine, and *Cæsar* had pardoned many of his aduersaries, he changes his stile, and in three set orations extolled him with praises to the very heauens. Further, when *Cæsar* heard that there was treason plotted against him, and would often say, that he had liued long enough; hee beseeches and requests him to reiect that opinion: for although he was full fraught with glory, and in that regard, for himselfe, had liued long enough, yet hee had not liued long enough for the Common-wealth, which could not bee without his ayd and protection: as concerning any danger, hee need not trouble himselfe.

selfe. For all of vs, sayth he doe not onely promise to watch about and guard thee, but also to interpose our owne sides and bodies. But for all this, after *Cæsars* death, he reioyced wonderfully, and boasted, that they who had slaine him, had obtained that glory, which could scarce be contained within the heauens.

This therefore is the fourth and last Monarchy: in which place we must note, how this city which was built by Shepheards: from most slender beginnings, by little and little increased to the height of potencie, and grew to bee Empresse of the whole world. Now hereafter, I will briefly, as farre as I may, declare after what manner it fell off by degrees from this most high estate, vnto ruine.

The end of the first Booke.

IOHN SLEIDAN of the foure chiefe Monarchies. OR, The Key of Hiſtory.

The ſecond Booke.

CEſar being ſlaine, his ſiſters ſonne *Caius Octauius* (hauing drawne about the military bands to his party) perſecuted the murtherers moſt bitterly. And at firſt, ſeemed to take armes in defence of the Com-

Octauius Cæsar begun his raigne, *Anno mundi*, 3925. and rained, An. 57.

Commō-wealth againſt *Marcus Antonius*: but afterward diuiding the Empire with him, and *Marcus Lepidus* ordained a Triumuirat, in which *Marcus Cicero* was by *Marcus Antonius* (whom hee had very vehemently oppoſed) put to death, being ſixty three yeares of age, which was eight yeares after *Quintus Hortenſius* his death, who was ſo many yeares elder then hee, as aboue ſayd. *Cicero* directly ouerſhot himſelfe in his owne policies: for when *Marcus Antonius* moleſted the Common-wealth, after *Caius Cæſars* death, he with exceeding great prayſes commended to the Senate, *Caius Octauius*, *Cæſars* kinſman, a yong Gentleman of twenty yeares of age, and begunne to vrge to haue him created Conſull, without any regard had to his age, producing examples of ancient times, how it

Gouernment by three.

Cicero put to death, *An.* 3926

it might be done, and refuting ſuch obiections as might ſeeme dangerous: profeſſing to be bound to the Senate vpon his honour, that hee ſhould alwaies continue ſuch a Common-wealths man, as he then was, and ſuch an one, as they ought chiefly, to wiſh and deſire him to be: but afterwards, forſaken by him, hee fell into *Marcus Antonius* his hands. *Marcus Brutus* reprehends him ſharpely for ſuch his flatterie.

Then as it is common, certaine grudges ariſing in emulation of the Empire, when as *Marcus Lepidus* for conſpiracie againſt *Octauius*, was formerly remoued out of the Triumuirat, and baniſhed: *Octauius* made warre againſt *Antonius* his other Collegue: and after his victorie at[k] *Actium*, ouerthrew both him and *Cleopatra* before mentioned, at *Alexan-*

[k] A towne in *Epirus*.

Alexandria, forcing them both to kill themselues, and made *Egypt* a *Romane* Prouince. Authors report, that in *Ptolomy*, *Auletes* raigne the yearely reuenues of *Egypt*, came to 12500. talents, which summe the learned of our times reckon to 7500000. crownes: but when it came in subiection to the *Romanes*, they iudged it to bee farre more rich, in regard of the traffique with *India* and *Æthiopia*. *Antonius* thus ouerthrowne and cut off, *Octauius* alone gouerned the Common-wealth forty foure yeare, and in 29. yeare of his Empire, and of the world, 3954. as most account, was our Sauiour IESVS CHRIST borne. *Herod*, sirnamed the Great, hauing seauen yeares before, most sumptuously re-edified the demolished Temple of *Ierusalem*.

christ born *An. Mundi.* 3954.

Marcus Antonius was married

ried to *Caius Octauius* his sister, but afterward (being intangled with *Cleopatra's* loue) forlooke his wife, and married her, which partly was cause of the warre. Both of them were exceeding riotous, and Authors relates almost incredible stories of their banquets, delights, and pleasures: but such as I before set downe, was the vp-shot and end of their liues: This *Marcus Antonius*, was that most famous Oratour before mentioned, *Marcus Antonius* his Nephew.

In *Caius Octauius* his raigne, the *Romanes* had their first war in *Germany*, within their owne territories. *Caius Iulius Cæsar* indeede ouerthrew the *Germanes* twice, but it was in *Gallia*, to wit, *Arioui∫tus* in the Country of the *Celts*, and afterwards at the meeting together of the Riuer *Maze*, and the *Rhyne*. After this victory, hee

he built a bridge, and past ouer the *Ryne*, but resting their a few daies, brought backe his Armie into *Gallia*, and broke downe the bridge. Two yeers after, he passed againe ouer the *Ryne* on his second bridge, a little aboue that place where hee formerly had led ouer his Armie, and then fully intended to haue gone against the *Suevians* but being certified by his Scouts of all affaires, and fearing much difficultie, and scarcitie of prouision, returnes into *Gallia*, breakes downe some part of the bridge, and in the other part, built a Tower and a Castle, and fortified it with Cittadels, that hee might not altogether free his enemies from the feare of his returne. And this was all that *Caesar* did against the *Germans*, as he himselfe writs. But *Octauius* by the two brother, *Tiberius* and *Drusus*, made warre against

l Now of *Pomerania* in *Germanie*.

against the [m] *Rhætians* and [n] *Vindelicians*, and with [o] *Vbian* forces, (who were confederates with the *Romanes*) *Quintilius Varus* being their Captaine Generall, inuaded that part of *Germany*, now called *Westphalia*: howbeit *Arminius* Chiefe-taine of the [p] *Cheruscans*, almost vtterly ouerthrew him, betwixt the Riuer [q] *Amasia*, and [r] *Lupia*. *Horace* in a most elegant Ode, comforts *Virgil*, lamenting his death. *Drusus* died in *Germaney*, leauing behinde him two sonnes, *Germanicus* a most worthy soldier, and *Claudius*.

Horace in another most elegant Ode, as we sayd before extols him, and deriues his pedegree from *Caius Claudius Nero*, who when hee was the second time Consull, together with *Marcus Liuius Sælinator* slew *Asdrubal*, *Annibals* brother, at the Riuer of *Metaurum*,

m *Germanes* borde ring on the Alpes.
n *Vandals*
o People about *Colen*.
p *Germanes* neere the riuer *Elbe*.
q *Ems*,
r *Necchar*.
Horat lib. 1, Ode, 24,
Horat, lib. 4 Ode 9,

rum, as he was bringing ouer a supply of forces. [f] *Augustus* also subdued the [t] *Cantabrians*, [u] *Aquitanians*, [*] *Pannonians*, [x] *Dalmatians*, [y] *Illyrians*, [z] *Salassians*, and inhabitants of the *Alpes*. It is reported, that he often intended, to lay off the weighty charge of the Empire: but againe considering with himselfe that it would be rashly committed to many mens authority, changes his minde. In the thirty third yeare of his raigne, deceased *Herod* the Great: whom hee, and *Marcus Antonius* in the third yeare of their Triumuirate: had made King of *Iudea*: and in the eight yeare after his death, his sonne and successor *Archelaus* was banished to *Vienna* a Towne in *Gallia*.

It is written, that *Octauius* maintained forty foure legions of soldiers in protection of the Prouinces of the Empire. In *Egypt*

[f] *Octauius* so stiled, in honour, as much as Soueraign at this day.
[t] Of *Biscoy* in *Spaine*.
[u] Of *Aquitane* in *Gallia*.
[*] *Hungars*.
[x] Inhabiting *Wenden-land* in some parts
[y] Of *Sclauonia* also *Wendi*
[z] Inhabiting neere *Lombardy*.

Egypt, there were three, as many in *Hiſpaine*, and eight in *Germany*. The yearely expence (as many in their computation reckon) amounts to 2100000. crownes, ſo as they may diſtribute amongſt euery legion, 272000. crownes yearely. A legion as they hold conſiſts of 6000. foot-men, and 500 horſemen.

Octauius is very much commended for his loue and liberality towards men renowned for their learning. The moſt famous Poets which then flouriſhed, were *Varius*, *Virgil*, *Plotius*, *Valgius*, *Fuſcus*, the two *Viſcoes*, *Polio*, *Meſſala*, the *Bibulies*, *Seruius*, *Furnius* and *Horace*, who deſired that his workes might haue approbation from them, not regarding other mens cenſures of thē. But the moſt famous wits of *Rome*, flouriſht in a certaine continuall order from *Marcus*

Portius Cato, and *Aphricanus* the elder, vntill this time. For this age wherein *Augustus* liued, was in a manner the last that retained that genuine sense, and pure vigour of the Latine tongue; for afterwards by little and little, it grew more and more corrupt, till it degenerated into meere barbarisme, which continued euen till within our memory.

The Poets borne at *Corduba*, a City of *Betica* in *Spaine*. vsed as *Tully* sayth, a kinde of grosse and vncouth garbe: but what thinke wee, would hee haue iudged of them, who liued after him aboue a hundred yeares, not onely those who were borne and brought vp at *Corduba*, but those of *Rome* also.

Tiberius An Dom. 16 an, 23. m, 6, d 26. Now *Tiberius Augustus* his wiues sonne, as also his sonne in law, and by adoption, did (but vtterly against his will, at least wise hee pretended so being

being with much adoe at last perſwaded to it by the Senates entreaty) take vpon him the Empire, and at his firſt entrance vndertooke nothing of himſelfe alone, but communicated with the Senate in all matters of importance: notwithſtanding within a little while after quite neglecting the affaires of the common-wealth wholly gaue ouer himſelfe to his pleaſures. In his raigne the *Parthians* bereft him of *Armenia*, and the *Dacians* and *Sarmatians* of *Myſia*, the *Germanes* foraged *Gallia*: but all thoſe loſſes nothing at all mooued him.

Many writers, (and thoſe, men of great eſteeme in poynt of Diuinity) record that in the fifteenth yeare of his raigne our Sauiour IESVS CHRIST was crucified, but Saint *Luke* writes, that in the ſame yeare he was baptiz'd by *Iohn Baptſt.*

Chriſt crucified, *Anno ætatis* 343 Luk. cap.

At that time flouriſht thoſe Lawiers, *Marcus Cocoius Nerua*, the father and ſonne, and *Caſſius Longinus*, *Tiberius Nero* who ſerued in the warre at *Alexandria* with *Caius Cæſar*, was this *Tiberius* his Father. To him *Caius Cæſar Caligula* ſucceeded, the moſt wicked ſonne and direct monſter of *Germanicus* his moſt worthy father. Its recorded that *Tiberius* in thoſe twenty three yeares which he raigned, had gathered together an infinite Maſſe of gold: which *Caligula* out of hand in the very firſt yeare conſumed. About the ſecond yeare of his raigne *Herod Antipa*, *Herod* the Great his ſonne, hee who beheaded *Iohn* the Baptiſt, was ſent in baniſhment to [b] *Lugdunum*: to whom *Herod Agrippa* ſucceeded, who beheaded *Iames* the Apoſtle.

Caius Caligula, Anno 38, an. 3, m. 8:

[b] *Lyons in France:*

After *Caligula* was ſlaine, *Claudius*

Claudius his vncle was brought in. Hee hearing that *Brittaine* had reuolted, went thither, and after hee had ſubdued part of the Iland, returned home.

Claudius, an 13. m. 8. d. 20.

In his raigne hapned that great generall dearth, which *Agabus* foretold, as the Euangeliſt Saint *Luke* mentions.

Acts, 11.

Claudius Nero, this *Claudius* his ſucceſſor, openly ſignified, that at ſometime or other, hee would quite abrogate the order of the Senatours. In his raigne *Britanie* gaue him a great ouerthrow, maſſacring the *Roman* Citizens and confederates there: the Legions alſo in *Armenia* were compelled to goe reprochfully vnder the yoke: with much difficulty *Syria* was held in: *Gallia* reuolted by the meanes of *Iulius Vindex* Gouernour of that prouince: as afterwards *Spaine*, *Sergius Galba* being their Lea-

Nero 56. An. 13.

Galba 68. m. 7. d. 7.

der. And whilst he was casting about how to recouer those losses, and making ready his iourney into *Gallia*, the rest of his forces which lay dispersed in other prouinces, rebelled. Histories relate what a loathsome and outragious Monster hee was: and thereupon being condemned by the Senate, as an enemy to the common-wealth, by the helpe of one of his seruants, hee killed himselfe. Besides *Seneca* these Poets then florished, *Lucan Persius*, and *Silius Italicus*: the last whereof was Consull in the last yeare of *Neroes* raigne. From that time the State of the Common wealth was brought to that passe, that the Creation of the Emperours lay within the power of the Armies and legions of the *Romanes*. After this manner was *Vespatian* made Emperour. For those bands which lay in *Mysia*, *Pannonia*, *Iudea*

Otho m. 4
Vitellius m. 8.

Vespatian 69.
an 9, m. 11. 324.

India, and *Syria* reuolted from *Aulus Vitelius*, and swore fealtie to *Vespasian*. Hee subdued *Achaia Lycia*, *Rhodes*, *Byzantium Samos*, *Thracia*, *Cilicia* and *Comagena*, making them *Roman* Prouinces, and vtterly subuerted *Iesusalem*, which warre his son *Titus* managed. *Flauius Domitian*, made warre against the *Chattics*, *Dacians*, and *Sermacians*, and triumphed ouer them. Then liued those Poets, *Statius Iunenal.* and *Martial.* *Vlpius Trajane* (adopted by *Coceeus Nerua*, and afterwards made Emperour) subdued the *Dacians*, twice rebelling, bringing them in subiection to the *Romans* and planting Colonies there, marching with an Army against *Armenia*, and the *Parthians* vpon dedition and fauour brought them in to his partie, thereupon gaining his sirname, of *Parthicus*, but all-

Titus 79. *an* 2. *m.* 1 *d.* 20.

Domitian 8. *an.* 15 *d* Now of the Lantzgraueof *Hessens* Countrey.

Nerua 96. *an.* 19. *m.* 1

Traiane 97 *an.* 16. *m.* 6. *d.* 15.

most all those Countries by him subdued at length rebelled, especially the *Armenians* and *Mesopotamians*, and the *Parthians* reiected the King whom hee had assigned them, as soone as his backe was turned homewards towards *Italy*. *Ælius Adrianus* subdued *Iudaa* then rebelling: the occasion of this warre, was because he had erected a Temple at *Ieruſalem* (which City he suffered to be inhabited againe) to *Iupiter Olympius*: which fact the *Iewes* tooke most hainously. Hee likewise visited the *Gallia's*, *Germany*, *Britaine*, & the *Hispaines*, as afterwards *Mauritania*, the *Parthians*, *Asia* and *Greece*: & returning home through *Sicilie*, from thence went againe into *Africa* and after his returne to *Rome*, sets forwards againe into *Greece*, and from thence passed into *Arabia* and afterwards to *Egypt*. Assem.

Adrianus 116. *an.* 19 *m.* 6. *d.* 15.

Assembling the Senate, hee commended to them *Antoninus Pius*, who being made Emperor after him, maintain'd peace, endeauoring to obtaine all mens good will, and by his letters and courteous demeanure, kept forreine Kings and people within their obedience. In his time flourisht those Lawiers, *Alburnius Valens Tuscianus*, *Vindius Verus*, *Vlpius*, *Marcellus*, *Arrianus*, *Tertullianus*, *Saluius Iulianus* *Lucius Volusius Metianus*.

Antoninus Pius, 151. *an.* 22. *m.* 7. *d.* 26.

To *Antonius Pius* his sonne *Marcus Antoninus* surnamed the Philosopher, succeeded: He tooke his [c] kinsman *Lucius Aurelius Verus* to be his Associate in the Empire. By him hee had happy successe in his warres in *Parthia*, hee himselfe looking to the affaires of the Common-wealth at home, and in the City: but soone after *Verus* dying he raigned alone and

Antoninus the Philosopher 160 *an.* 16. *m.* 0. *d.* 1.

[c] *Corien* calls him his brother

and ouercame in his warre against the *Germanes* ouerthrowing also the t *Marcomannes*. *Sarmatians*, *Vandalls* and g *Quadies*, who had inuaded the h *Pannonia's*. For at this time almost all the nations from *Illyricum* to *Gallia*, had conspired against the name of the *Romanes*.

Commodus Antoninus the most lewd sonne of this most laudable Prince, by his Leiutenants ouerthrew the i *Moores* and *Dacians*, quieted the *Pannonians*, *Germanie* *Britanie* which Countries cast off their subiection: He himselfe in the meane while wallowing in all manner of filthinesse and crueltie.

Septimius Seuerus hed ciuill warres with *Niger* and *Albinus* who procured *Asia* and *Gallia* to make a reuolt: he had good successe in his warres against the *Parthians*, vanquished the

Iewe

t Now *Moauians* Inhabitants in and about *Silesia*.
g Vpper & lower *Hungarie*.
h *Commodus Antonius* 179. an. 12. m 8. d 15.
i Of *Mauritania* or *Morisco* in *Barbary*.
Pertimax: m. 3
Didius Iulianus m. 7.
Septimius Seuerus 162 a 1: 17. m 8. d 15.

Iames throughout *Syria*, ſubdued *Abagarus* King of the *Perſians* and compelled the *Arabians*, to come to compoſition. He fortified *Britania*, with a wall croſſe ouertwart the Iland, reaching to the Ocean on both ſides: and hauing ſubdued thoſe people that annoyed the Country dyed at *Yorke*.

His ſon *Antoninus Baſſianus Caracalla*, made warre againſt the *Parthians* and *Armenians*. This was hee that commanded *Pupinianus*, *Captaine of the Guard, to bee put to death, for refuſing to defend his *fratricide. In his time flouriſht many Lawyers, and moſt of them *Pupinianus* his Auditors as *Tarruntius, Paternus Macer Papirius Fronto Anthius, Maximus Hermogenianus, Africanus; Florentinus Triphoninus, Iuſtus Calliſtratus, Venulcius Celſus.*

Caracalla. 210 *an 6. m. 2. d. 5.*

**Præfectus prætorij*, Gouernor of the pretorian Cohort.

k For *Caracalla* ſlew his brother *Geta.*

After *Caracalla* was ſlaine *Ma-*

Macrinus 216. *An.1.m.1.d.28.*

Heliogabalus 217. *an.3.m.6.d.4.*

Alexander Seuerus 221. *an.13.m.0.d.9.*

Maerinus succeeded, who hauing bad successe in his warres against *Artabanus* King of the *Parthians*, and perceiuing the legions encline to *Heliogabalus Bassianus* his son concluded a peace.

Alexander Seuerus a stout souldier, successor to *Heliogabalus* that most brutish of men ouerthrew *Artaxerxes* King of the *Persians* in maine battle: and recouered *Mesopotamia*, which was lost by *Heliogabalus*. Hee made warre by his Lieutenants in *Mauritania*, *Illyricum* and *Armenia*, and had good successe: but afterwards in his expedition against the *Germanes*, who had forraged the Countrey of *Gallia*, was murthered by certaine of his owne souldiers. *Vlpianus* the Lawyer, *Papinianus* his scholler was very intimate with him, and in his time liued *Paulus Pomponius*, and *Modestinus*.

To

To this *Alexander Maximinus* ſucceeded: Hee with maine forces marches into *Germanie*: his Army conſiſting not onely of *Roman* ſouldiers, but alſo of *Moores*, *Oſdronians* and *Parthians*, who had ſerued vnder *Alexander*. He burnt the Dorps in *Germany* farre and wide, put very many of his enemies to the ſword, and tooke many more priſoners returning with a wealthy Army: *Germany* being at peace he marches to *Syrmium*, and was purpoſed to haue made warre againſt the *Sarmatians* nor onely ſo, but his further intent was, to haue brought all thoſe Conntries which lye northward euen to the Ocean, in ſubiection to the Roman Empire: but his ſouldiers not enduring his cruelty, created *Gordianus* their Captaine Generall, which the Senate (dearing no good will neither towards

Maximinus 234. An 3.

Gordianus 236. *m.* 1. *d.* 6.

wards *Maximinus*) ratified and proclaimed the other enemie to the Common-wealth. He, going about to reuenge this fact, first made an Oration to the armie, and then set forwards towards *Rome*: the Senate vpon notice hereof proclaime *Pupienus* and *Balbinus* their Emperours: and to *Pupienus* was committed the charge of the warre against *Maximinus*, who, together with his sonne, was at the siege of [1] *Aquileia* slaine by his owne soldiers as hee lay asleepe in his Tent.

Pupienus, Balbinus 236. *an* 1. some months.

[1] A Citie in *Italie.*

After this, *Pupienus* and *Balbinus* being both slaine in a mutinie amongst the soldiers in the second yeere of their raigne, the gouernement of the Empire was committed to *Gordianus* a yong Gentleman. He in the fourth yeere of his raigne, marched through *Mœsia* and *Thracia* against the

Gordianus iunior, 237 *Ann.* 6

the *Persians*, & in theie countries subdued the enemies of the *Romanes*; from thence, striking through *Syria*, came to *Antiochia*, which was then held by the *Persians*. There he fought diuers battels, in so much as hee compelled the *Persians*, who were in a manner accounted the terror of *Italie*, to containe themselues in their own limits. At length, in the sixth yeere of his Empire, hee was slaine, being betraied by *Philip* Captaine of the Guard, who had raised a mutinie amongst the soldiers. And this *Philip* also, who sent ouer his Lieutenants with an armie against the *Scythians* that were vp in armes against the confederates of the *Romanes* and there free-boroughs came to the [m] like end: *Decius* succeeded him, who being created Emperour by the Legions of *Illyricum*, and after warde

wards by consent of the Senate; first of all appeased the troubles in *Gallia*. Afterwards commending the care of the Common-wealth to the Senate, Hee, together with his sonne, whom hee had made his Collegue in the Empire, sets forwards (having the Senates consent thereunto) on his expedition against the *Scythians*, who both by sea and land forraged the country of Thracia and other dominions of the Empire: from whence (after some battels, hauing got the vpper-hand, and drawne the enemy into a narrow straight place) hee had returned with complete victory, had not Gallus Hostilianus Gouernour of the furthest parts of *Mysia*, reuealed his counsell to the enemy; whereupon it came to passe, vpon ioyning battell, that both hee and his sonne (by trechery circum-

circumuented) were ſlaine.

After this, *Gallus* made Emperour by one of the Legions, and the remainder of the ſuruiuing ſouldiers, concluded a peace with the *Scythians*, to the diſhonour and ignominy of the *Romanes*, in that he promiſed to pay them tribute, neuer heard of before, and altogether vnworthy the Maieſty of ſo renowned a State. The *Scythians* hereupon growne more fierce, broke the league, ouer-runne *Dardania*, *Thrace*, *Theſſaly*, *Macedonia*, not reſting there, but *Aſia* alſo: ouerthrowing and ſubuerting very many Cities. At length, many other Countries, after the example of the *Scythians*, turned enemies to the *Romans*, and many rebelled. The *Parthians* broke into *Syria*, and ſeized vpon *Armenia*, putting their King *Tyridates* to flight. And ſuch was the inſolencie of

Gallus 250 *An.* 1. *m.* 6.

of the *Scythians*, that they threatned *Italy* also, and were likely to haue done much mischiefe, had not *Æmilianus*, Gouernour of *Mysia* vpon the coast of *Sarmatia*, encouraging his souldiers with faire promises, and hope of rewards, giuen them an ouerthrow, and pursuing them very farre, tooke from them their owne Territories: for this cause the soldiers proclaime him Emperour: and *Gallus* vpon notice hereof marching forth to resist them, was slaine, together with his sonne *Volusianus* his Collegue in the Empire.

Æmilian 5, 252, m, 4,

In this age flourished *Cyprian* Bishop of *Carthage*, certaine of whose Epistles to *Lucius* Bishop of *Rome*, whom hee calls his brother and collegue are amongst diuers others, yet extant: and many more of his to *Cornelius*, where amongst other matters, hee complaines of

of thoſe, who being for their offences condemned by the Biſhops of *Africa*, and degraded from their Prieſthood, had appealed to *Rome*: for it is fit ſaith hee, that where the crime is committed, there the cauſe ſhould bee diſcuſſed. Sithence euery Paſtor hath a certaine portion of a flocke committed to his charge, whereof he muſt render an account to the Lord: therefore the concord of Biſhops is not to bee abrogated, nor their decree to bee annihilated, who had already giuen ſentence in the cauſe, in *Affrica*. *Valerianus* 292. An. 7.

In the meane ſpace, another army, lying in the Alpes, creates *Valerianus* Emperour, a man of Noble parentage, which when it came to the eares of *Æmilians* ſouldiers; they, to ſhake off all danger from themſelues, kill their owne Emperour, and flie to *Valeri-*

Valerianus his party. This *Æmilianus*, when hee was made Emperour, sent his letters to the Senate, wherein hee promised to deliuer Thracia and Mesopotamia from the enemy, to recouer *Armenia*, and on euery side to repell the enemies of the *Roman* State. Valerianus making warre against the *Persæans* was by fault of one of his Captaines, taken prisoner, by Sapor king of *Persia*, whom the neighbouring Princes, and confederate Nations, councelled (but all in vaine) to haue dismissed. For it was the destiny of the *Romanes* to grow more valiant in resistance, after they were conquered.

Gallienus 295: An. 8:

Valerianus thus taken prisoner his sonne *Gallienus* succeeded. Hee wholy gaue himselfe to his pleasures, neglecting the Common-wealth, insomuch as the armies which lay dispersed in the prouinces, elected

cted euery one a new Emperour: as in *Gallia*, *Spaine*: the *Pannonia's*, *Illyricum*, *Egypt*, *Africa*, and the reſt: but partly by him, partly by ciuill diſſentions amongſt themſelues, all thoſe were ouerthrowne. In his raigne, the *Gothes* ſeize vpon *Thracia*, forrage *Macedonia*, and beſiege *Theſſalonica*: the *Scythians* inuade *Bythinia*: *Cappadocia*, and *Aſia*, and ſtriking through the [n] *Euxine* ſea into [o] *Isther*, offer hoſtility againſt the free-borroughs of the *Romans*, but ſo exceſſiue was his rechleſneſſe, then when theſe newes of the Prouinces reuolt, and publike calamity came to his eares, his reply was in deriſion and ſcorne: as though all this could not hinder the ſubſiſtance of the Common-wealth, or the preſeruation of the dignity thereof, or the ſtate thereof bee any whit impaired thereby. Thus by this diſho-

n Which parteth *Europe* and *Aſia*.

o A Riuer in *Illyricum* which begins in *Germany*, and is there called *Danubius* or *Danow*.

dishonourable course of life, growne into contempt, as well at home as abroad, he got himselfe many enemies in the common wealth, the *Scythians* and *Gothes* mixt together with other Nations, being about 320000. strong, were then vp in armes, and had conspired the destruction of the *Romans*: but *Flauius Claudius* (who succeeded after *Galienus* was slaine) with much adoe vanquished all those in *Mysia* and other places.

Flauius. Claudius 167. An. 1. m. 9. Aurelianus 269. An. 6.

Hee was a man of great prowesse, and worthy of a longer life. After *Claudius*, followed *Aurelianus*, because his worth was eminent, having made euident proofe thereof in *Claudius* his raigne, against the enemy in many places. Hee made warres in *Insubria*, and with the *Marcomannes*: at the beginning indeede with much hazard and ieopardy, but

but at length, (after the *Sibylla's* bookes, by his command, were peruſed, and the Senate, had purged Religion) with happy ſucceſſe. After his returne from thence to *Rome*, (where hee inflicted a penalty vpon thoſe, who in his abſence had raiſed an inſurrection;) he made warre for recouery of thoſe Prouinces which lay eaſtward, and in *Syria*, which *Zenobia* held, (a puiſſant and magnanimous Queene, and her owne childrens Tutrix) being left to her by her husband *Odenatus*, who in *Gallienus* his time, behaued himſelfe very couragiouſly and ſtoutly in thoſe parts.

Whereſoeuer this Emperour ſet his foot, there he ouerthrew the enemies of the *Romans*, as in *Illyricum*, *Thracia*, and the reſt: and at length arriuing in the P enemies country, after no leſſe doubtfull

P *Syria.*

q Zenobia,

then dangerous battell, ouerthrew and tooke the q Queene; who replying vpon the *Armenian* and *Persian* auxiliars, most valiantly resisted him. The chiefe City in that Country, (which hee subdued,) was *Palmyra*: the Citizens whereof, vpon the Emperours returne out of *Asia* into *Europe*, rebelled, killed their Gouernour, and maintayning a Garrison for their defence. But the Emperour making another expedition thither, demolished the conquered City, put all to the sword, not sparing any age or sexe. After this, hee recouered *Egypt*, which then had reuolted, and of new reduced the *Gallia's* into the *Roman* subiection. Then hee triumphed at *Rome*, and from thence marching through *Illyricum*, proclaimed warre against the *Persians:* but in his iourney, was slaine by his owne familiar frends.

friends. After his death, there was a * vacancy for a r space, which had neuer happened before since *Romulus* his decease. At length, *Tacitus* succeeded, who, continuing Emperour but a few moneths, atchieued no memorable exploit; him the Senate requested, that he would not ordaine his children his successors after him in the Empire, but some man of approoued worth and integrity: which was, *Probus*, who being confirmed, as well by the Legions as the Senate, recouered *Gallia*, and in diuers battels ouerthrew the ſ *French*, a people of *Germany*, who had gotten possession thereof.ſ He vanquished the *Sarmatians*, and other Nations in *Illyricum*; and coasting through *Thracia*, with the very terrour of the name of the *Romanes*, and the greatnesse of his noble exploits, obliged

* *Interregnum.*

r for sixe moneths. *Tacitus* 275 *m.* 6

Florianus, *m.* 2. *Probus* 476 *an.* 6; *m.* 4.

ſ Inhabiting *Franconia*, now called *Frankenlandt.*

the barbarous people to his ſubiection: In *Aſia* hee ſetled a peace, and the fame onely of his name, made the *Parthian* King ſue for peace. He concluded a peace with the *Perſians*, and from thence returnd into *Thracia*, and tranſplanted thoſe forraigne Nations whom hee had ſubdued into the *Roman* territories; ſome whereof, continued in ſubiection, but others contrarywiſe, notwithſtanding afterward hee vanquiſhed all or the greateſt part of them: and hauing compoſed the rebellions in *Gallia*, *Hiſpaine*, and *Brittaine*, in his iourney through *Illyricum*, towards his intended warre againſt the *Perſians*, was trecherouſly ſlaine, by his owne ſouldiers.

At this time the Commonwealth flouriſhed, peace being ſetled in all Nations on euery ſide farre and neere; in ſo much as

as *Probus* would ſometimes ſay that the world would come to that paſſe ſhortly, theat there would bee no need of Legions and garriſons: but the ſouldiers offended at this his ſpeech, thought it beſt to cut him off.

After him, followed *Carus*: hee ſubdued the *Sarmatians*, who now, after *Probus* his death, were growne more inſolent, and menaced euen *Italy* it ſelfe: then making an expedition againſt the *Perſians*, tooke *Meſopotamia*, and marching on further, died.

Carus 282. An. 1. and ſome moneths together with his ſonnes, *Carinus* and *Numerianus*.

His yonger ſoone *Numerianus* ſerued in the warres with him: his other ſonne *Carinus* hee had ſet ouer the *Gallias*. *Numerianus* was ſlaine by his wiues father, and in his place, came *Diocletian*: with whom *Carinus* had diuers conflicts about obtaining the Empire, but was ouerthrowne and

t Arius. Aper. Diocletian, 284. an. 20.

ſlaine. *Diocletian* in regard of the troubles and ſeditions in many places kindling, tooke to him for his Collegue, *Maximianus*. Hee quieted the country of *Gallia* then in commotion, as alſo *Affrica*; and *Diocletian* & *Egypt*, putting the Authors of theſe broiles to death. Hee recouered *Britaine* alſo in the tenth yeare after the reuolt: and to the end that the ſtate of the Common-wealth might bee more firme, and to auoyd new commotions about ſucceſſion, hee adopted *Galerius*, add *Maximianus*, *Conſtantius Chorius*. *Galerius* being ſent by *Diocletian*, againſt *Narſes* King of the *Parthians*, had ill fortune in that warre, loſing the major part of his army: but afterwards commanded to renew the warre, hee ouerthrew the enemy in maine battell, and marching on further in thoſe places, then any

any other Emperour, except *Trajan* tooke *Ctesiphon*, subdued all *Assyria*, and recouered the fiue Prouinces, lying beyond the riuer [n] *Tigris*, which had reuoked in *Trajan* the Emperours time.

Diocletian hauing setled the affaires of *Asia*, returned into *Europe*, where the *Scythians*, *Sarmatians*, * *Alans*, x *Bastarnaus*, y *Carpies* *Chatties*, and *Quadies*, were then all in peace. Afterwards both hee, as also *Maximianus* resigning their Soueraigntie, inuest their Collegues before mentioned, with the title of Emperours: *Constantius* of the *Gallia's*, *Britaine*, the *Hispaines* *Italie*, and *Affrica*. and *Galerius*, of *Illyricum* *Greece*, aud *Asia*: *Marcellus* was then Bishop of *Rome*, whose decree is extant, prohibiting Bishops from calling a Synode, without the authority of the Sea of *Rome*, as also

n Running through *Armenia*.

* *Almaines* lying betwixt the *Alpes* and *Ments*, as *Carion* supposes

x People of *Sarmatia*.

y Dweling about the Riuer *Corpis* in *Scythia*.

Constantius *Galerius* 304 *an. 2 m 3*; *an. 7 m. 5*.

to condemne any Bishop who should appeale to *Rome*. But *Maxentius* the Emperour persecuting him, his estat as others before him, was both meane and miserable. Wherevpon it may easily bee coniectured, whether or no, he (in those perplexities and lurking corners) could take so much vpon him, as to establish such manner of decrees.

At length *Constantius* dying at *Yorke*. *Galerius* adopted *Severus* and *Maximianus*. In the meane space, the Pretorian souldiers at *Rome*, elect *Maxentius* their Emperour. After *Severus* was slaine, *Maximianus* made choyce of *Licinius* for his Collegue in the Empire. Among those arose great troubles: whereupon the Nobles of *Rome* call home *Constantine*, *Constantius* his sonne, then imployed in the *Gallias*, to rescue their City from the tyranny

tyranny of *Maxentius*. Hee marching forward into *Italie*, with part of his armie, in pitcht field, got the victorie, and afterwards quite defeated *Maxentius* his forces at the Citie of *Rome*. After this, hee fought against *Licinius*, who being ouerthowne in battell, and almost growne into hatred with all men, was at length slaine by his own souldiers. Many write that the cause of this warre was, for that *Licinius* did bitterly persecute the professors of Christianitie, although he had been very often intreated and admonished to the contary by *Constantine*. For from the time of the resurrection of Christ, vntill this age, (almost three hundred yeeres) the professors of Christ were diuersly punished; omitting those whereof the Scripture makes mention, as of [z] *Stephen*, [a] *Iames* the bro-

Constantin the Great 306. *an.* 30. *m.* 6. *d.* 27.

[z] Acts, 7
[a] Acts 11.

ther of *Iohn*, [b] *Peters* impriſonment and inlargement by the Angel; paſſing ouer it in ſilence *Paul* likewiſe, who grieuouſly perſecuted the Church of God but after his conuerſion, eſcaped no kinde of punniſhment for Chriſts cauſe: the *Roman* Emperours alſo, as *Nero Domitian*, *Trajan*, *Septimius Seuerus*, *Decius*, *Valerian*, *Aurelian*, *Diocletian*, and *Maximian* cõmitted moſt horrible and outragious maſſacres. But *Conſtantine* comming to the Empire, and imbracing the true Religion, afforded harbour and refuge to the Chriſtians. Then firſt of all beganne the Biſhops of *Rome* to liue in ſafety; for till then, almoſt all of them, (who from *Peter* whom they will haue to bee their firſt, are reckoned to thirty three) were tormented with perſecutions.

6 Acts. 9.

Their decrees are inſerted in the

the bookes of the Councels, but the greatest part of them are so sleight, triuiall and quite different from the sacred Scriptures, as makes it credible that they were a long time after forged by some others.

But if they be true, and proceeded from them, then indeed that which *Paul* by prophesie foretold, seemes most rightly to be applied to this place, that then that sonne of perdition and man of sinne beganne to worke the mistery of iniquity. That decree yet extant goes vnder Anacletus his name the fourth from *Peter*, as they reckon; wherein hee ordaineth the Church of *Rome* to bee (by Christs command and institution) the head of other Churches. 2 Thes. 2.

To *Alexander* the next after him, is that decree attributed, where he commands, that the water should bee consecrated

ted with salt, to purge the people, and to auoid the snares of the Deuill. But iudge I Pray you how far those differ from that Maiestie of the Apostles, how farre from the writings of S. *Iohn* the Euangelist who almost liued till this very time. I haue onely set downe these two decrees, that by them wee may iudge of the rest, for they are almost of the same molde, and cary open colour of ambition, and not onely the speech wants the grace, but also the matter it selfe hath no salt in it both which *Paul* requires in the Ministers of the Church.

And to this place also appertaines, that decree of *Constantine* the Emperor, which they haue inserted into their books, for the foundation and bulwarke of their power. For the cause aud occasion of his excessiuer liberality, which is there set downe, may out of history, be

C. S *Ierom.* writes that he dyed in the 68 yeer after the passion. *Suidas* says that he liued 120 yeares.

Colos. 4.

In conferring (as they imagine) the City of *Rome* the Empire of the West &c. vpon the Popes

be diſproued and conuicted of falſhood. Further, bee it granted that the Emperor was thus moſt exceedingly profuſe perhaps for himſelfe onely, hee might, herein abate of his own right, but could not doe it, for his ſucceſſors, authorized with coequal power, and Protectors of the Common-welth. For hee who damnifies the freedome and liberties of his Empire, ought not to haue the title of Father of his Countrey, nor can he ordaine another to ſhare with him in equality of authority or preiudice the ſame.

By *Conſtantine* the Emperours appoyntment, a moſt Populous Counſell was called and aſſembled at *Nice* a City in *Bythinia*, wherein the hereſie of *Arrius*, denying Chriſt to be coequall in ſubſtance with his father, was condemned. Is recorded that many Biſhops, not

The firſt Councell of *Nice* held in An. 325. continued 3 yeares.

not onely out of *Europe* and *Asia*, but also out of *Egypt* and *Lybia*, met together there. Amongst other, one decree was, that through *Egypt*, *Lybia* and *Pentapolis*; the auncient custome should bee maintained, that is, all the Bishops there should remaine vnder superiority of the Bishop of *Alexandria*, notwithstanding the vsurpation and withholding thereof by the Bishop of *Rome*: as also that the Church of *Antioch* and other Prouinces and Churches should each one entirely retaine their peculiar priuileges. After this Councell, certaine lewd opinions were vented, (one *Eustathius* being Author) about shunning of marriage, about a new and vnusuall kinde of habit, about forbearance to eate flesh, and forsaking propriety of possessions. And hereupon (many husbands procuring a diuorce, and

e In monastical manner, and some women attired in mens habite.

and ſeruants leauing their maſters, betaking themſelues to this new and religious habite, as they call it; women likewiſe taking the ſame courſe, forſaking their husbands: and thoſe who fed vpon fleſh, as alſo the Miniſters of the Church that were married being publikely contemned, as perſons impure and vnacceptable to God;) a Councell was aſſembled at Gangra a towne in Paphlagonia, wherein thoſe were condemned, who either taught or held that opinion.

Conſtantine (for re-eſtabliſhing a peace in the Commonwealth) being with moſt generall acclamation, confirmed both by the Senate and people of *Rome*, turned himſelfe wholy to forraine warres, and after many battels ouerthrew the *Gothes* and *Sarmatians*, then forraging the Countrey of Thracia: afterwards being ſtrucken

ſtrucken in yeares, he proclaimed warre againſt the *Perſians*, who waſted the Country of *Meſopotamia*: and in *Aſia*, where he was arriued with his Army-(after receipt of a medicine for recouery of his health) breathed his laſt, not without ſuſpition of poiſon. This is he by ſurname, ſtiled the Great: who named *Byzantium* a City of *Thrace*, after his owne [f] name, and thither tranſlated the Imperiall Seat. He began his [g] raigne about the three hundred and twelfth yeere after the birth of Chriſt. It is written that Comets of wonderfull greatneſſe, were ſeene before his death. Hee left three ſonnes, *Conſtantine*, *Conſtantius* and *Conſtans*, amongſt thoſe was the body of the Empire diuided, to *Conſtantine* part of the *Alpes*, *Gallia*, *Hiſpaine*, *Brittaine* [h] the *Orcades*, *Ireland*, and [i] *Thyle*, were allotted:

[f] His deſire was to haue it called New *Rome*, but vſe preuailed and altered it to *Conſtantinople*.

[g] At *Rome*, but hee raigned 6: yeares before in *Brittaine* and elſewhere.

[h] The Iand of *Orkney* lying neere and belonging to *Scotland*.

[i] Now called *Iſland* lying beyond *Scotland*, as ſome ſay; others *Hitland*.

allotted: to *Conſtans*, *Italy*, *Africa*, with the Iſlands, *Illyricum*, *Macedonia*, *Achaia*, *Peloponneſus*, and *Greece*: to *Conſtantius*, *Aſia*, and *Thrace*.

Conſtantine not ſatisfied with this diuiſion made warre vpon his brother *Conſtans*, and at *Aquileia* (whither he was then come) ioyning battell with *Conſtans* his forces: loſt both his Army and his life. *Conſtans* who in the meane time, was vp in Armes againſt the[k] *Getes* and *Sarmatians* in *Dacia*, returnes into *Italy*, and hauing gotten the *Alpes*, inuaded *Gallia*, and in two yeares ſpace won all his deceaſed brothers dominions: but was ſlaine within a while after by the treachery and crafty dealing of *Magnentius*. Him, the ſouldiers (beforehand allured and inueigled with rewards) elected Emperour. *Conſtantius* the onely ſuruiuing brother of the three,

Conſtantine 337. An. 3.
Conſtantius 337. An. 24
Conſtans 337. An. 12.

[k] The ſame who were afterwards called *Goths Carion.*

three, vpon notice hereof, (deputing *Gallus* his vncles ſonne, and ſiſters husband, his Vice-gerent, ouer *Aſia*) marches with a ſtrong Army into *Italy*, and ſo into *Gallia* where in maine battell he ouerthrew the Enemy, But *Magnentius* eſcaping-ſends him Ambaſſadors to ſue for peace. Whoſe ſuit the Conqueror, rejecting, he on a freſh wages battell again, but with ill ſucceſſe: thereupon flying to Lyons, where perceiuing his owne friends to conſpire his deſtruction, and not hauing any corner where to hide himſelfe, became his owne executioner. Afterwards *Conſtantius* commanded *Gallus* his Coſin germane, and Vicegerent for *Aſia* as aboueſaid, (who abuſed his authority and power) to bee put to death, when he could not otherwiſe remedy it. After this he returnes into *Aſia*, with intent

tent to prosecute the warre in *Persia*, which, by reason of *Magnentius* his faction abouementioned, he had broken off. And in regard the *Germanes* about this time, making an inroad into *Gallia*, forraged the Countrey there, hee adopted his other Cosin germane *Iulianus*, *Gallus* his brother, and to him committed the protection of *Gallia*. *Iulianus* (hauing had prosperous successe in his designes, and in many battels gotten the vpper hand) beat backe the Enemy beyond the *Rhyne*, tooke many prisoners, and rescued many *Roman* souldiers out of prison, and at *Argentine* almost quite cut off the Enemies whole Army. Hereupon the souldiers proclaime him not onely *Cæsar* but also *Augustus*, and set a Diadem vpon his head, but against his will as hee pretended. For in his letters to *Constantius* he in deauored

Strasburg in Germany

deauoured to remoue the enuie of the fact from himselfe.

But *Constantius* hereat grieuously offended, ceasing his warre in *Persia*, and liberally & kindely entreating his neighbouring Nations, that they might continue their allegiance sets forward on his iourney to reduce *Iulianus* to his duty; but on the way whilst hee was yet in *Asia*, being taken with a feuer, ended his life, first ordaining *Iulianus* his successor.

Iulianus 361. *an.* 1. *m.* 7. *d.* 23.

During *Iulianus* his raigne the enemies contained themselues within their owne bounds not raising any commotion in any place. Hee himselfe went out against the *Persians*, and forraging *Assyria* (hauing put the Enemies forces to flight) marched forwards as farre as *Ctesiphon*. At length returning home with his forces, the enemy set vpon him in the rere, where, fighting in the midst

midſt of his ſouldiers in the mayne battalia, hee receiued a wound, whereof, within a while after, hee dyed, an enemy to the name of Chriſt. The ſouldiers hauing thus loſt their Leader, being plunged in great diſtreſſe, create *Iouinianus* Emperour: at what time *Iulius* the firſt of that name was Biſhop of *Rome*: certaine of whoſe Epiſtles to the Biſhops of the Eaſt, are yet extant, in which hee often preſſes it, that to *Him* alone, as Biſhop, ſayth hee, of the chiefe See, by a certaine ſingular priuiledge and diuine ordinance, belongeth the right of conuocating Generall Councells. But it may ſeeme wonderfull, with what face hee could write thus; or they ſo boaſt of it, when as before him, *Conſtantine* had cal'd the Councell of *Nice*; and after him, a hundred yeares full, *Martianus* the Emperor called the

Iouinianus, 363. *m.7.d.22.*

the Councell of Chalcedon. To Him alſo alone, as Primate of that City, ſayth hee, appertaines the cognizance of Epiſcopall cauſes, and other matters of that kind of more weighty importance. This his arrogancy the Biſhops could not endure. But aſſembling at Antioch, boldly reply: That it was not fit, that the ſentence by them paſſed ſhould bee repealed by him, for that they were poſſeſſed of the ſame degree of dignity, whereof hee was, and the doctrine of Chriſt, came from their countries to *Rome* * at the ſecond hand, by the paines and miniſtery of the Apoſtles. Wherefore in caſe hee ſhould proceed, and make new decrees, they would not obey them neither haue communion with him, but would take ſuch a courſe as the matter it ſelfe ſhould require. And in another Coun-

*Tandem.

cell

cell in the ſame City (of greater concourſe then the former) amongſt other decrees, They limit the office of a Biſhop, as alſo of a Metropolitane, about diſcuſing matters of more weighty importance. For they decreed, that in caſe the Biſhops concurre not, the Metropolitane of the next adioyning prouince, ſhall delegate certaine Iudges to determine the cauſe. But if any Biſhop bee condemned for any offence by common decree of the reſt of the Biſhops, they ordaine that their ſentence ſhall ſtand firme, and not bee repealed by another. They further eſtabliſh that the Biſhop, ſhall faithfully diſpence the * goods of the Church, and diſtribute them to the vſe of the poore, and that hee himſelfe if neede require, may take from thence as much as ſhall be neceſſary for naturall ſuſtentation. For St. Paul

* *Bona ſacra:*

1 Tim. 6. 8

Paul ſayth, *We ought to bee content with food and rayment.* Which goods if the Biſhop ſay they, ſhtll perchance conuert into his owne or his friends priuate commodity, or commit the adminiſtration thereof to his kindred, he is to be reſtrained by a Councell.

At length *Iouinianus* (the enemy being at his backe) concluded a diſhonourable peace, redeliuering thoſe fiue Prouinces beyond *Tigrin*, (wonne by *Galerius*, as aboue mentioned) as alſo part of *Meſopotamia*: and afterwards couenanted that the *Romanes* ſhould lend no ayd, to the King of *Armenia* their friend and confederate. Marching forth with his Army, as hee was returning home dyed vpon the borders of *Bythinia*. The ſouldiers forthwith create *Valentinianus* Emperour, who ſoone after his comming to Cen-

Constantinople, tooke his brother *Valens* to be his, Collegue in the Empire, and commending thse [m] Countries to his care, marched into *Germanie*, where hee subdued the *Saxons* bordering vpon the Ocean, and soone after he had beene in *Gallia*, [n] dyed as it is written vpon a vehement passion of anger. By this time his brother *Valens* was arriued in *Asia*, to represse the *Parthians* forraging the Country of *Armenia*, and the King of *Persia*, who breaking the league, was falne into open hostility: But after the *Hunnes* or *Tartars*, and *Scythians* had ouer-runne *Pannonia*, *Epirus*, and *Thessaly*, he returnes into *Europe*, where in pitcht battell being ouerthrowne, and as he fled wounded and carried into a little cottage, which the Enemy setting on fire, hee there dyed, That Edict of *Valentinianus* the

Valentinianus 364. *An.* II. *m.* 8. *d.* 32. together with his brother *Valens*

m Of the East.

n In *Pannonia* falling into a feuer by an excessiue straining of his voice in an angry reply against some offenders.

Emperor, and of *Valens*, is yet extant, wherein it is prouided, That those who betake themselues to a monasticall life and solitainesse, and in that regard escape warfare and publike imposítions, shall bee drawne out of their cells, and eithes serue for their Country, or else forfeit all those benefits, afterwards conferred vpon them, that vndergo both paines and perill for the Common wealth

The Enemies not long after (appeased by the Emperours gift and mony) departed from *Constantinople* which they then besiged *Saxony* being at peace, *Valentinian* the Emperour chose his sonne *Gratianus* for his Collegne: who, after his father and vncle *Valens* their decease, succeeded them both. both. But he (the Common-welth being tossed with diuers billowes of troubles) assumed

Gratian 375. an 7. m. 9. d. 5. With his son *Valentinianus* the II.

sumed *Theodosius* a worthy Commander in warre, and sent him into the Easterne Countries. There at *Constantinople* he vanquished the *Huns* and *Gothes*, and chased them out of the Coasts of *Thrace*. After this, *Gratianus* was treacherously slaine in *Gallia*, by *Maximus* one of his Coronels who affected the Empire. *Ausonius* of *Burdeaux* (certaine of whose Poës are yet extāt,) was his Tutor for literature, whom afterwards he aduanced to the dignity of a Consull. His son *Valentinianus* also died, in manner of the same death, by the treachery of his familiar friend *Arbogastus*. But the murtherers escapt not scot-free, for both of them were slaine by *Theodosius* the Emperour. *Maximus* was taken and put to death at *Aquileia*, and the other acted that part himselfe.

Those Tyrants thus cut

Theodosius 378 *an.* 16 *l.* 12.

off, *Theodosius* posseſt of the Empire, ordaines his two ſons *Honorius* and *Arcadius* his Collegues: to whom by reaſon of their nonage hee appointed Protectors, or as it were Gouernors: to *Arcadius* he aſſigned *Ruffinus*, and to *Honorius Stilico*; and not long after departed his life. by his command a Councell was held at *Conſtantinople*, wherein the hereſie of *Macedonius*, who derogated from the Diuinity of the holy Ghoſt, was condemned. The Fathers there aſſembled, being as it is recorded, 150 in number, ordained Biſhops, both there as alſo at *Antiochia*, which they ſtile the elder and truely Catholike Church, & at *Ieruſalem* which they call the Mother of all Churches. They tranſmitted thoſe their proceedings to *Damaſus* Biſhop of *Rome*, who endeauored to call them

The ſecond Councell of *Conſtantinople*, *An.* 381.

to *Rome*. Saint *Hierome* when he was yong, was familiar with this *Damaſus*. He was the Author of that memorable ſaying. Whereſoeuer the Biſhop is, be it at *Rome*, *Eugubium*, *Conſtantinople*, *Rhegium*, or *Alexandria*, he is of the ſame demerit and Prieſt-hood. *Theodoſius* hath the fame for a very godly Prince, who being reprehended by St. *Ambroſe* Biſhop of *Miliane*, and prohibited entrance into the church tooke it patiently.

Arcadius gouerned in the Eaſt at *Conſtantinople*, and *Honorius* at *Rome* But *Ruffinus* with intent to tranſlate the Empire to himſelfe, vnderhand incited the King of the *Gothes* to make warre againſt *Arcadius*: whoſe trechery being diſcloſed, hee was ſlaine by the ſouldiers.

Arcadius 395 *an.* 13. *m.* 2. *d.* 15. Together with *Honorius*, who raigned about 15. yeares after the death of *Arcadius*.

Innocent the firſt of that name excommunicated *Arca-*

dius the Emperour, for that he gaue consent to haue Saint *Iohn Chrysostome* expelled out of his Church, as it is related in the Papall Law. At this time flouriſht Saint *Augustine* alſo, Biſhop of *Hippo*, who was preſent at the third and fourth Counſell of *Carthage*, where amongſt others, thoſe decrees paſſed, That the Biſhop ſhould haue a little manſion houſe neere to his Church.

That his houſhold ſtuffe ſhould bee meane, his table and prouiſion poore, and by his vprightneſſe and integrity of life ſhould get himſelfe authority. That hee ſhould vſe the vtenſils of the Church, as things committed to his charge, and not as his owne.

This *Innocent* the firſt writ alſo to Saint *Auſtine*, and to *Aurelius* Biſhop of *Carthage*, where exhorting them to mutuall prayers, he cals them brothers,

thers, and fellow-prieſts. After *Innocent* followed *Zozimus*, who commending the decrees of the Fathers, and of antiquity, ſayth that it is not lawfull, no not for the See of *Rome*, as they call it, to make any alteration therein, or any contradictory decree. Hee alſo reprehends and corrects the cuſtome of his time, that many men of no learning, aſpired to the order of Prieſthood. *Boniface* the firſt ſucceeded *Zozimus*, in whoſe time the ſixt Councell of *Carthage* was aſſembled, whereto there was great concourſe, wherein Saint *Auſtine* alſo was preſent. *Boneface* ſending his Legates thither, declared that the Councell of *Nice* had granted ſuch priuiledge to the See of *Rome*, that all Prouinces euery where, ſhould appeale thither: and therfore requeſted the Fathers there aſſembled, to eſtabliſh

and confirme the same. Their answere was, that as far as they knew, there was not any such decree at *Nice*, but, that the certaine truth might bee sifted out and knowne, they were agreed to send for a true copy of the Councell, from the Churches of *Alexandria* and *Constantinople*; which being at lenght produced, the decree was found quite contrary: to wit, each Prouince should haue the cognizance of their owne causes, and that an appeale should lye from the Bishops to the Councels of the Prouince, or else to the *Oecumenicall* Councell, as they call it St. *Cyril* was then Bishop of *Alexandria*. *Boniface* died before the copy came, and his successor *Celestinus* vrging the same, had his answere according to the tenor of that decree.

Arcadius dying, his sonne

The-

Theodoſius the II. ſucceeded, in whoſe raigne, and by whoſe command, a Councel was held at *Epheſus*, in which *Neſtorius* was condemned, who denyed that Chriſt was borne God of the Virgin *Mary*, and at this time dyed St. *Auguſtine*. On the other ſide *Stilico Honorius* his Protector dealt no leſſe perfidiouſly then *Ruffinus*: For hee not onely gaue the *Gothes* leaue to inhabite and ſeate themſelues in *Gallia*, but alſo inſtigated them to march into *Italy*, with their Leader *Alaricus*, and tooke the City of *Rome* which hapned in the yeare of *Rome* built 1162, and of our Lord 412.

Theodoſ. H. 408. *an.* 4. *m.* 2. *d.* 28.

The *Gothes* keeping their Rendezuous at *Rome* for a while, and harrazing the Countrey till they came to [n] *Rhegium*, from thence ſayld ouer into *Sicily*, where they ſuffered ſhipwracke, and loſt.

[n] A ſea coaſt town in *Italy*, now called *Regio*, oppoſite to *Sicilie*.

their King. But *Stilico* ſtill continuing his villainous and treacherous practices, with intent to tranſlate the ſway of gouernement into his owne ſonne *Eucherius* his hands: was (vpon diſcouery of his plot) taken, and by *Honorius* his command put to death. King *Alaricus* thus diſpatcht, the *Gothes* elected his kinſman *Adolphus* their King, and vnder his leading marcht backe againe to *Rome*, where, what remained, they ſpoyle. Hee being ſlaine, *Genſericus* raigned, after whoſe death followed *Wallio*, with whom *Conſtantine Honorius* his ſiſters husband and Lieutenant for the *Gallia's*, as afterwards Collegue in the Empire: entered into amity and league, granting them *Aquitania* a part of *Gallia* to inhabite.

At the ſame time the *Scots* and *Picts* infeſted *Brittaine*, but

but were put to flight by the auxiliary forces ſent from *Honorius* the Emperour, likewiſe the *Vandals* and *Alans*, with their chiefetaine, *Genſericus* pillaged vp and downe *Hiſpaine*.

After *Honorius* his deceaſe at *Rome*, his ſiſters ſonne *Valentinianus* ſucceeded him in the Weſt and at *Rome*. *Theodoſius Arcadius* his ſonne, as aboue recited, in the meane ſpace gouerned the other part of the world at *Conſtantinople*.

About this time the *Vandalls*, and *Alans* (prouoked by the diſſentions and factions of the *Roman* Captaines in *Africa*) breake forth out of the *Hiſpaines* into *Africa*, and waſted the country with fire and ſword. After which deſtruction a certaine part of *Africa* was giuen them to inhabite.

The *Gothes* (who by *Honorius* his permiſſion and conſent

as

as a little aboue mentioned, inhabited *Aquitane* in *Gallia*) not satisfied with their owne bounds, offered violence and iniury to their neighbours: and wearied *Narbon* with their siege. But *Litorius* being dispatcht thither with forces, rayſed the siege, set the Towne at liberty, brought in prouision, and giuing them battell, at the first sped well, but afterwards was taken with the losse almost of his whole Army: so great was this ouerthrow that the *Romans* were forced to sue for peace. In like manner *Genserieus* King of the *Vandals* breaking the league made with the *Romans* in *Africa*, as before mentioned, on a sudden surprizes *Carthage*, where he exercised much cruelty: which City had then continued in subiection to the *Romans*, for 585. yeares. Thus hauing got possession of *Carthage*, hee

strikes

strikes ouer into *Sicilie*, which hee made flow with blood. Hereupon *Theodosius* the Emperour rigging a Nauy, prepares for warre against the *Vandals*, but by reason the *Hunnes* forraged *Thrace* and *Illyricum*, the Army was recalled out of *Sicilie*, to defend those parts. The *Scots* & *Picts* then againe make an irruption into *Brittaine*, and the inhabitants despairing of ayd from the *Romans*, desire helpe from the English, a people of *Saxonie*: who being allured with the beautifulnesse of the country, by little and little conueying ouer more forces (oppressing the *Brittaines*) brought the greatest part of the Iland into their subiection. Not long after this, *Theodosius* the second, died at *Constantinople*; in whose raigne, as it is written, the Sunne was doubled, and a comet appeared almost from

The *Saxons* inuade *Brittaine* about 448.

fromthe Ides of *Iuly*, till the moneth of *September*.

Martianus 450. an. 6. m. 6.

Martianus succeeded *Theodosius* in the East. Wee haue aboue mentioned *Genserieus*, with whom *Valentinianus* concluded a peace, diuiding *Affrica* betwixt them. About this time, *Athila* King of the *Huns*, hauing got *Dacia* and *Pannonia*, most cruelly harazared the neighbouring Countryes: *Macedonia*, *Mysia*, *Thracia*, intending to conquer the Easterne part of the *Romane* Empire. But perceiuing that the warre would bee extreame difficult, in regard the *Gothes* (who then were in league with the *Romans*, and inhabited part of *Gallia*, as aboue-sayd) ayded the *Romans*, therefore by his Ambassadours, he requires there amity and confederacy, but *Aetius Valentinianus* the Emperours Lieutenant preuented that; who corroborating

roborating the league with *Theodoricus* king of the *Gothes*, wholy bent himſelfe to the warre. *Athila* neuertheleſſe proceeds, and in the Downes of *Chaalons*, (which part of *France* in regard of the plaines in *Campaigne*) was this moſt diſmall battell fought, in which as it is recorded, 180000. men were ſlaine. And *Athila* looſing the day, determined to kill himſelfe, leaſt he ſhould fall aliue into the hands of his enemies. Howbeit king *Theodoricus* his ſonne, following *Aetius* the Lieutenants counſaile, retnrned home with his forces, to ſucceed his deceaſed Father: whereby *Athila* getting time to recollect himſelfe, retires into *Pannonia*, and leuying new forces, marches, full ſwolne with reuenge, into *Italy*: where at length, winning the City of *Aquilleia*, (firſt wearied out with a long-

long-continuing siege) sackt and burnt it. Then forthwith he takes *Concordia*, *Padua*, *Vicencia*, *Verona*, *Brecia*, *Bergamo*, *Millane* and *Pauie*: and so pillaging vp and downe o *Flaminia*, incamped at the meeting of the Riuer of *Mencius* and *Po*: where deliberating about his passage to *Rome*, with his army, *Leo* the first of that name, Bishop of *Rome*, comes to him, and so farre preuailed, that altering his intent, hee not onely, surceased his expedition to *Rome*, but also quite remouing out of *Italy* returned into *Pannonia*, where within a while after he ended his dayes.

o *Romandiola.*

This was that *Leo*, many of whose Epistles to *Theodosius* the second, and *Martianus* the Emperour, are extant, wherein hee partly apologizes for his absence from the Councels by them conuocated, and intreats them

them not to bee offended for ſending thither of his Legates; and partly alſo requeſts, that they would deſigne ſome place in *Italy*, rather then in *Aſia*, for the celebrating of Councels: but he ordained nothing.

Whileſt *Athila* thus raged vp and downe *Italy*, the City of *Venice* was builded; when many of the abler ſort, leauing the adioyning places, betooke themſelues to thoſe ſea-ſands, little Iſlelands, and hillockes, as into ſome harbour. Thus meane and in a manner deſperate and miſerable, was the beginning of this City, which now, as we ſee, is growne to a wonderfull greatneſſe. They reckon 805. Dukes till this time; the firſt whereof was [p] *Paulus Anazatus*, in the yeare of grace, 706. being 252. yeares after the beginning of the building of their City. After-

Venice begunne to be built. *An.* 430.

[p] Some Authors call him *Paulutius Anafeſtus*, and write of his beginning *in Anno Dom.* 697. and after their City built, 282.

Afterwards when *Valentinianus* was slaine, *Genscricus* King of the *Vandals*, sailing ouer with a Nauy from *Africa* into *Italy*, marches with an exceeding great army (being ayded by the *Moores*) towards *Rome*, and takes the City, in a mauner left quite desolate: but at the earnest request of *Leo* the Bishop, who also, as aforesayd, appeased *Athila*: hee forbore fire and sword: The City-sackt, captiues were transported to *Carthage* in great troopes. The enemyes after this, infest *Campania* with grieuious outrages, raise *Capua*, *Nola*, *Naples*, and other Citties: those who suruiue the sword, they condemne to the irons, and growne rich with the wealth of *Italy*, returne into *Affrica*.

Martianus, Emperour of the East, a Prince of a calme nature

ture, inioyed peace: hee was wont to say: *That it was not fitting for a Prince to take armes, as long as he might liue in peace.* In his raigne, and by his command, a very great Councell was assembled at *Chalcedon*, wherein *Eutiches* who confounded the two natures in Christ, was condemned.

The fourth Councell at *Chalcedon in Bythinia.*

There, amongst the rest, it was decreed, that no Clerke, as they call them, should bee admitted to the Churches of two Cities. Plurality of liuings, as wee tearme it, was not then heard of, which now is growne so ordinary, as nothing is more common. And almost within our memory, that custome crept in amongst other blemishes of the Church, that the Pope may conferre two Bishoprickes vpon one man. If now therefore hee would restore the custome in this behalfe, which was held

held in the next precedent age; hee ſhould doe his duty, but ſeeing that cannot bee, can we ſuppoſe it euer to bee granted, that matters ſhall be amended according to the holy Scriptures, and decrees of the Apoſtles and primitiue times? No, they toile in vaine, that ballance the deedes of the Popes, with the rules of ancient Religion.

Leo, 457. an. 17.

Martianus dying in the ſeauenth yeare of his Empire, *Leo* ſucceeded him: and *Auitus*, (when *Genſericus* after the taking of *Rome*, was returned into *Affrica*) ſucceeded *Valentinianus* at *Rome*, and in the Weſt next to him, *Majoranus* then *Seuerus*, and after him, *Anthemius*: after thoſe followed others, but nothing eminent, who periſhed in their mutuall maſſacres and treacheries, and raigned but a while, inſomuch that now the other part

part of the *Roman* Empire in the West, ſtood in great danger.

Nothing memorable is recorded of *Leo* the Emperour, but that hee entred into amity and league with the *Gothes*, then waſting *Illyricum*, and an Epiſtle or two of *Leo* the Biſhop of *Rome* to him, are extant. *Zeno* [q] *Iſauricus* was his ſucceſſor, Amongſt thoſe alſo who ruled in *Rome*, after *Valentinianus* his death, *Auguſtulus* was one, in whoſe raigne, *Odeacer* with a mayne army of *Herulians* and *Syrians*, out of *Pannonia* inuades *Italie*, takes *Oreſtes*, a Nobleman of *Rome*, who was fled to *Panie* with his forces puts him to death, ſackes and burnes the Citie: and marching on, takes in the whole Country as far as *Rome*. *Auguſtulus* deiected in minde voluntarily reſignes his Empire: *Odoacer* enters the Citie, and

Zeno 474 *an.* 17. *m.* 2. *d.* 7.

[q] Called *Iſauricus*, becauſe he was borne in *Iſaurica in Cicilia*.

and obteining the kingdome of *Italie*, gouerned without reſiſtance fourteene yeeres. But at length, *Theodoricus* King of the *Eaſt-Gothes*, ſent by *Zeno* the Emperour: marching from *Conſtantinople*, ouer threw the r*Gepides* and *Bulgarians*, oppoſing him; and ſo making his way through *Myſia*, and *Pannonia*, arriues in *Italie*, and incampes himſelfe not farre from *Aquileia*: whither *Odoacer* afterwards repairing, a ſharpe battell inſued. *Odoacer* loſing the day, fled; but recollecting his forces, ioynes battell on freſh, and is againe ouerthrown, moſt part of his armie loſt: ſome whereof periſhed in battell. others in f *Atheſis*. Hee flies amaine towards *Rome*, where ſhut out, he ſpoiles the Country about, and comes to *Rauenna*: there at length, after three yeeres ſiege, vpon the Cities yeelding,

r Part of the *Gothes*.

f A Riuer running through *Verona*.

ding, she was taken and put to death.

Odoacer thus cut off *Theodoricus* became Lord of *Italie* marches to *Rome*, where hee assembled two Councels of Bishops, whom hee called together out of sundry Prouinces of *Italie*, to sit vpon [t] *Symmachus* his cause, whom the greatest part refused, as one vnworthy, and falsly created. This *Theodoricus* was an *Arian*, as the *Papall* bookes haue it. His sirname was [u] *Veronensis*, and was descended from that *Theodoricus* aboue mentioned, who was slaine in the battell against *Athila* King of the *Hunnes*. *Odoacer* was a [x] *Rugian*, a people of *Germanie*, vpon the *Danish* sea. *Theodoricus* thereby to strengthen himselfe, obliged the Kings of the *Vandals*, *Visigothes*, and *Burgundians* to him by affinitie.

Whilest the squares went thus

[t] Pope of *Rome*.

[u] Because of his victory at *Verona*.

[x] Of *Rugenland* in *Pomerania*.

thusin Italie, great troubles were on foot, throughout Thrace Affrica, and Britaine, where at length, the Saxons got the vpperhand.

Anastatius, 491. an. d. 2. m. 3. d. 3.

Zeno dying at *Constantinople*, *Anastatius* succeeds him. Hee fauoured many of those, who allowed of *Entyches* his opinion, wherupon a dissention grew betwixt him and *Gelasius* Bishop of *Rome*: who by tedious letters dehorts him, as their bookes haue it, from vndertaking the protection of them: for there were two things saith he whereby principally this world should bee gouerned; the sacred authoritie of Bishops and regall power: and so much the more charge lies vpon the Priests for that they, euen for other men, must render an account to the Lord: but he was to gouerne for ciuill policie, yet so, as to bee subiect to the Ministers

sters of God, and to depend vpon their iudgements: and seeing that Priests doe obey the lawes politicall, it is likewise iust, that hee himselfe should not refuse those constitutions, which the Steers-men in matters diuine establish: therefore sithence this honour ought to be giuen to all Ministers of the Church, the cause it selfe requires, that to him most especially it should bee attributed, whom God by his owne word as also the consent of the Church, would haue to rule ouer the whole order of Priests. Let him leaue off therefore, and rather heare him an excuser in this life, then finde him an accuser in the other. After this, his decree concerning the holy Bible is annexed, in which hee grants superiority to the Sea of *Rome*, as they call it, then to *Alexandria*, and the third place to *Antiochia*.

In *Anastatius* his raigne *Sicilie* was tossed with troubles and hostile insurrections which were quenched by the Authors death. Then also the *Hunnes* wasted *Armenia*, and *Cappadocia*: the *Getes*, *Macedonia*, *Thessalie*, and *Epirus*: from both which the Emperour was enforced to buy his peace by gifts, and no small losses.

Much about this time, which was in the yeere of Grace, 500. *Clodoueus* king the *French*, first of all imbraced the Christian Religion, hauing beene very oft and earnestly solicited thereunto, as also to forsake his Idols and superstition by his wife who was of the house of *Burgundie*. The Councell of *Orleans* in his raigne established which consisted of thirty three French Bishops, is extant: wherein amongst the rest, it is decreed, that

that if the rauiſher of a Virgin ſhall flie to a Church, though hee haue offered violence to the *Virgin*, yet hee ſhall not come within danger of death: but ſhall either bee as a bondſlaue, or elſe redeeme himſelfe from her.

Anaſtatius ſlaine by lightning, or as the papall law ſpeakes, dying vpon an *eruption of his bowels: *Iuſtinus* ſucceeded, a man of obſcure parentage, and from a ſwine heard made a ſouldier, as it is written. He was at diſſention with *Theodoricus* king of the Gothes, Lord of *Italie*, about diuerſitie of Religion, but yet they held off from blowes: *Theodoricus* dying, *Alaricus* his Grand-child by his ſonne ſucceeded, to the great ioy and contentment of the *Gothes*. *Iohn* the firſt of that name, was then Biſhop of *Rome*. He with other more, was ſent in Ambaſſage,

* Sleidan (as *Meibomius* notes) here miſtakes the Emperour for Pope *Anaſtatius*. *Iuſtine*, 518 an. 9. d. 24.

baſſage, by the aforementio-ned King *Theodericus*, to *Conſtantinople* 1 where, as their bookes relate, hee was moſt honourably entertayned, not onely by the people, but alſo by the Emperour himſelfe. For they, ſay they, were exceeding ioyous, that it was their fortune, now at length to ſee and entertaine the bleſſed Saint *Peters* Vicar, as they tearme him, in *Greece*; which had neuer befallen them before ſince *Conſtantines* time the Great, and *Sylueſters*. But it is ſtrange, that they ſhould prate thus of *Sylueſter*, who came not into *Greece*, as it is manifeſt: For, then when it was moſt behoofefull, as alſo needfull, I meane at the Councell of *Nice* hee ſtirred not, but ſent thither his Legates, *Victor* and *Vincent*: and afterwards as they relate; hee himſelfe aſſembled another Councell at *Rome*, wherein

wherein he confirmed the decrees to the Councell of *Nice*. where is extant alſo, a conſolatorie Epiſtle of this *Iohn* the firſt to the Biſhops of *Italie*, wherein hee exhorts them, that albeit King *Theodoricus* polluted with *Arian* hereſie, threatned deſtruction to them and to all *Italie*, yet they ſhould not deſiſt from their purpoſe, but reſolutely proceed.

After *Iuſtine*, his ſiſters ſon *Iuſtinianus* was made Emperour: Hee wholly bent himſelfe to the reſtoring of the Common-welth, and at his firſt entrance ſet ouer the whole charge of gouernment to *Beliſarius*, who by many great battels, ouercame the *Perſians*, tranſgreſſing their bounds, and offring violence to the *Romane* dominion: ſet free *Illyricum*, waſted by the *Gepidas* and *Bulgarians*, reduced

Iuſtinianus, 527. an. 38. m. 3. d. 13.

ced the *Parthians* being vp in armes, to amity: ouerthrew the *Vandals* most powerfull forces in *Affrica*, recouered *Carthage*; and from thence striking ouer into *Sicily*, where hauing notice of the rebellion in *Affrica*, he returnes thither, and speedes well. Then at length marching into *Italy*, takes *Naples*, sackes it, ouerthrowes the *Gothes*, whose King *Theodatus* then was. After this, hee repaires to *Rome*, where hee was kindly and honourably entertayned by all, removing from thence, takes in the townes and forts euery where, and amongst the rest, *Perousa*: after this, he besieges *Rauenna*, where *Vitiges*, King of the *Gothes* giuing him battell looseth his Army, is taken prisoner, and carried away by *Belisarius* to *Constantinople*.

The *Gothes* renewing their forces in the country beyond *Po*,

Po, elect *Hildebrand* their king. To him, two succeeded, and after them, *Totilas*. Hee in *Belisarius* his absence, ouer-running all *Italy*, takes *Rome*, after a siege, sackts and sets sire on it. *Belisarius* hereupon recalled, hauing finished the warre against the *Parthians*, who againe forraged Syria, returnes into *Italy*, and recouers the City in a manner left desolate: and then incountering with the enemy, had a happy battell: but sailing into *Sicily* for prouision, is called backe by *Iustinianus*, which affoorded occasion to *Totilas*, to renew his forces, and returne to *Rome* The Emperour forthwith ordaines *Narses* the Eunuch, Generall in the *Italian* warre: hee expelled the *Gothes* quite out of *Italy*, which was so much the easilier effected, they hauing lost their King *Totilas*, who dyed of a wound. That

warre with the *Gothes*, lasted eighteene yeeres. And *Iustinianus* thus recouering *Italie*, and *Affricke*, after he had assumed his Grand-child by his daughter, for his Callegne in the Empire, departed this life. Some writ, that he was a Prince of a dull nature, and ouerswaied by his wife *Theodora*. *Tribonianus* the Lawyer was in high esteeme with him he who (abrogating the writings and disputations of the Ancients) gathered out of them an hodchpotch of the lawes, and left vs the fragments onely, which now goe vnder the name of the *Pandects*: But he had certaine helpers in that worke, whose names are mentioned all ouer. He did the like also in the references and lawes of the Emperours, which being comprehended in three bookes, the *Gregorian*, *Hermogenians* and

and *Theodosian*: he contracted into one volume, naming it *Iustinians Code* vsing other mens helpes therein, whose names the Emperour reckons vp in the preface to his booke. There are Authors that report, how this *Tribonianus* was a couetous man, and for *gaine*, (as the Poet saith) made and marred lawes. In the *Code* before mentioned, there are many of *Iustinians* lawes, which contradict the former. There was added also, a peculiar worke, of new constitutions, which throughout beare the name and title of *Iustinian*.

Virgil. 6. Ænead

The Emperour intreated *Belisarius*, whom I spoke of, (him by whose prowesse hee had obtained so many and so glorious victories) most ignominiously: and in his extreame old age, caused his eyes to bee put out. In his raigne, some Councels were assem-

bled at *Constantinople*, wherein *Menna*, Patriarch of that City, sate President: who, as their bookes haue it, is stiled the most holy, most blessed, and œcumenicall. In the beginning of the Code, an Epistle of the Emperour to the Arch-bishop of the City of *Rome*, is set downe, wherein hee calls him, the Head of all Churches, and subiects all to him. Furthermore, although the learned are of opinion, that it was forged, yet grant it be true, it is certaine, that this controuersy continued many yeares after, till at length the Bishops of *Rome*, amplified with abilities, preuailed: and in the possession of the Church, would erect to themselues a Tower, which, whither reared by the hands of men, or fauour of Princes, now carries the name, as though it were founded by power diuine. We haue

haue formerly mentioned how the ſixty Conncell of *Carthage* was held in S. *Auſtines* time, wherein Pope *Boniface* the firſt, and Pope *Cæleſtines* fallacies were vnmaſked, when they alledged how it was decreed at *Nice*, that all Prouinces ſhould appeale to them. And in *Iuſtinians* time, *Boniface* the ſecond was Biſhop of *Rome*, whoſe Epiſtle is extant, wherein he ſharpely reprehends *Aurelius* Biſhop of *Carthage* in the before-mentioned Councell, and ſaies, that he with his fellowes, did by the deuils inſtigation reſiſt the Church of *Rome*: as alſo giues God thankes, that in his time, *Eulalius*, *Aurelius* his ſucceſſor, was reconciled to the Church of *Rome*, and after that, rehearſes the words of *Eulalius* wherein he profeſſes, that hee condemnes both his predeceſſors and ſucceſſors who-

whatsoeuer they bee, that goe about to weaken the priuiledges of the holy and Apostolicall Church of *Rome*.

Agapetus the next to *Boniface*, remoued *Anthemius* Patriarch of *Constantinople* out of his place, for denying the two natures in Christ. *Theodora* the Empresse, tooke this very haynously, and by *Belisarius*, admonished *Siluirius Agapetus* his successors, to restore him: and *Belisarius* (certaine other accusations also being layd to his charge) turnes him out of his place, and sends him into banishment, substituting *Virgilius*, who likewise called to *Constantinople*, and refusing to recall *Anthemius*, was condemned to the like punishment: whereby it sufficiently appeares, in what manner the Bishops of *Rome* were then subiect to the power of the Emperour.

Iustine

Iustine the II. being Emperour, the *Persian* war was renued, which miscarying, *Archelaus* the Emperours Lieutenant of a new concludes a peace.

Iustin II. 565 *an.* 10. *m.* 10. *d.* 20.

Narses the Emperours Lieutenant throughout *Italy*, (after the *Gothes* were expullst, and *Totilas* dead) held *Italy*, almost sixteene yeares: afterwards called home by the Emperour from whom receiuing certaine vnwelcome letters, and therein perceiuing his ingratitude, hee not onely stayes still, but further for reuenge, (sending away his Ambassadours) instigates the *Lombards* then seated in *Pannonia*, proffering them very large rewards, to depart from *Pannonia* and come into *Italy*, the most pleasant and fruitfull of all Countryes. Thereupon they tooke that part of *Italy*, which till this day, retaines the name from them. This *Iustine* as it

it is written, constituted an Exarch, Gouernour throughout *Italy*: hee was as it were the Emperours Vicar or Deputy His chiefe seat was at *Rauenna* neglecting *Rome*, and in each City and towne ordaining some Gouernour. The *Italian* writers report that this new ordinance, was the bane of *Italy*, and *Rome*. *Narses* soone after dyed at Rome.

Tiberius II 576. an 6. m. 20. d 8.

Tiberius not long before adopted and made Collegue in the Empire, was *Iustines* successor. Hee got two happie victories against the *Persians*: and established a peace with the *Lombards*, whose Kingdome then reached from the *Samnites* vnto the *Alpes*, the City of Rome onely expected, which after they had for a space sharply besieged, at length (constrained by force of tempest and raine) raised their siege. *Mauritius* *Tiberius* his sonne

Mauritius 583. an. 19. m. 3. d. 11.

ſonne in law, being created Emperor, in ſome certaine battels by his Lieutenants, ouerthrew the *Perſians*, and at length concluded a peace with them: recalling his Army, he expelled the *Scythians* out of *Myſia*, repreſſed the *Lombards* throughout *Italy*; chaſed the *Hunnes* out of *Pannonia*: but being hated of the ſouldiers for his couetouſneſſe, was enforced (vpon a mutinie ariſen) to flie to *Chalcedon*, & there at length was ſlain together with his wife, children, and whole race, by *Phocas* the Centurion, who afterwards through ſeditiõ, was proclaimed Emperor. *Phocas 603. an. 8. m. 4. d. 9.*

It is written that in *Mauritius* his raigne, a Comet appeared for ſixe moneths ſpace, and then alſo was *Mahomet* borne, whom we will ſpeake of hereafter.

At this time, *Iohn* Biſhop of *Conſtantinople*, ſtiled himſelfe the

the vniuerſall Patriarch: but *Pelagus* the ſecond, Biſhop of *Rome*, vehemently reſiſted him, and pronounced his decrees voyd. His ſucceſſor *Gregory* the firſt ſharpely reprehends him for this, and indeed confeſſes, that in the Councell of *Chalcedon*, this title and honour was giuen to his predeceſſors, but none of them vſed it. As alſo he exhorts *Mauritius* the Emperour by his Letters, to reſtraine him, for that alſo appertained to his authority, which hee (in arrogating ſuch a kinde of power) did much impaire. It is recorded that the next after *Gregory*, *Boniface* the III obtayned the primacy from *Phocas*, certaine Edicts and charters being publiſht in that behalfe.

In *Phocas* his raigne the *Perſians* very grievouſly annoyed the Common wealth: ſeizing vpon *Meſopotamia*, and *Aſſyria*

ria, and marching on euen vnto the lesser *Asia*, such was the negligence of this Prince. *Germany* also, together with *Gallia*, and a great part of *Italy* reuolted. The *Saracens* wasted *Ægypt*: and he himselfe being slaine for his cruelty and neglect of the Commonwealth, *Heraclius* succeeded. Then againe the *Persians* marching on very farre throngh *Ægypt*, inuade *Africa* which they bring vnder their subiection. The *Scythians* diuersly dismember *Europe*. *Heraclius* at length marching into *Asia*, when hee could not make his peace, though propounding certaine conditions, little tending to the honour of the *Romanes*, almost by meere constraint encountred with the *Persians*, (who now also forraged *Iudæa*) and in a battell or two discomfited them. Then marching on beyond the Riuer

uer Tigris, and ransaking *Persia* farre and wide (entring at length into amity with *Sirochus* the[a] King of *Persia's* son, who hauing slaine his father set vpon the Kingdome) recouered *Affrica*, and *Ægypt*, and whatsoeuer else the *Persians* had taken, and it was couenanted that the Riuer Tigris should deuide the *Persian* and *Roman* dominions. At this time also the *Saracens* seruing in the warre vnder *Heraclius*, being defrauded of their pay, reuolt in huge troopes, and pillaging vp and downe *Syria* (*Mahomet* being their Chieftaine) took *Damascus*, forraged *Ægypt*, subdued *Arabia*, and gaue the *Persian* some ouerthrowes. This *Mahomet* was by parentage obscure, but subtill and aduenturous, as also afterwards enriched by mariage: and by reason of his prœp t wit carrying great sway

[a] *Cosroes.*

ſway he propounds a new kind of doctrine (to reaſon indeed very delectable, but for the moſt part ridiculous and fooliſh) whereby hee might more and more oblige the minds of men, and more firmely poſſeſſe himſelfe with ſoueraignty.

And though this flame might at firſt haue eaſily beene quenched, yet being neglected, in ſhort ſpace grew to a maine height: and ſo from that time the Maieſty and Empire of the *Romans* in the Eaſt, decayed more and more, Nations reuolting one after another.

In *Heraclius* his raigne, the fourth Councell of *Toledo* was celebrated, where, becauſe moſt part of the Prieſts throughout *Spaine*, did not euery day (but onely vpon that day which wee call Sunday) vſe that prayer which Chriſt himſelfe taught vs: amongſt other matters, a reformation therein

therein was decreed, as also that the *Apocatyps* of S. *Iohn* as they say should bee read in the Church from Easter to Whitsontide.

The *Gothes* then raigned in *Hispain*, when as the *Spaniards* (growne weary, as it is common, of forraign gouernment) attempting an innouation, this Councell vnder a seuere penalty prohibited the practizing of any conspiracy against their King or the *Gothish* Nation: and that after the Kings decease, the States and Clergie of the whole Nation, should by common consent appoint the successor, The same decree was also renued in some other of their assemblies. The singing of the Hebrew *Alleluiah* in the Church, in time of *Lent* was likewise forbidden, for that it was a time of sorrow and not of reioycing. To *Heraclius*, *Constans* succeeded, who

Constantine the III. raigned 2 moneths, and *Heraclian* two yeares.

Constans the II 642. an. 27. m. 8. d. 10.

who was his grand-child by his ſonne *Conſtantine*. Hee had an infortunate ſea-fight with the *Saracens*, who getting the victory, tooke *Rhodes*, and without doubt had proceeded further, had not the factions kindled amongſt them procured a two yeares truce with the *Romanes*. The Emperour hauing this time to pauſe, marches with an Army into *Italy*, thereby, as he boaſted, to reſcue it out of the Enemies hands: and arriuing at *Tarento*, beſieged *Luceria*, and other places of *Apulia* belonging to the *Lombards*: but in his iourney toward *Naples*, his rereguard was cut off by the *Lombards*. Entring *Rome* peaceably, at length hee diſrobes the City of all its ornaments, and there ſtaying a few dayes ſtroeke ouer into *Sicily*, where afterwards hee was murthered in a Bath: and ſome diſſenſion

ariſing

ariſing after his death about ſucceſſion, the *Sarazens* (laying hold on this opportunity) with a great Nauy inuaded *Sicilie*, commit a horrible maſſacre of the Iſlanders, take *Syracuſe* and carry away with them all *Conſtans* his ſpoiles taken from *Rome*. To *Conſtans*, *Conſtantine* the IIII ſucceeded, commonly called the *Bearded*. He for certain yeeres encountring with the *Sarazens* at length vanquiſht them inſomuch as they ſued for peace, and for a thirty yeares Truce: as alſo condeſcended to pay a yearely Tribute; and the *Romanes* Enemies in the Eaſt herewith ſhaken implore a peace. But the *Bulgars* trans paſſing their bounds waſt *Thrace*, with them a peace was at length concluded, and both the [b] *Myſia's* yeelded vp to them: but afterwards (when they perceiued the *Romanes* negli-

Conſtantine the IIII, or *Bearded*, 669. an. 16 d 7.

[b] Now *Buſſia* in *Aſia*.

negligence) breaking the league, ſtye out againe, and extenuate the forces of the Empire. This Emperour as it is recorded, was the firſt, that ordained, that whom the Clergy and people of *Rome* together with the ſouldiers, had created Biſhop of that City, hee ſhould obtaine full power: for till this time the dignity of Biſhop of *Rome* depended vpon the confirmation either of the Emperour, or of his Deputy for *Italy* There is a long Epiſtle extant of pope *Leo* the II, to *Conſtantine*, wherein hee condemnes all manner of heretiques, and highly extolls him for his loue to, and protection of Religion as alſo for his liberality and munificence: adding, that the Church hauing gotten ſuch a Defender, moſt ioyfully triumphed.

The ſixt counſell at *Conſtantinople* 680.

The ſixth Counſell at *Conſtantinople* was held in his raign which

which consisted of 150. Bishops. Wherein, about the end thereof, mention is made (but in obscure words) of those Canons stiled the Apostles. But *Gratianus* reckons vp the contrary opinions, for hee auerres, that there be those that can affirme, that they were compiled by heretiques, reiected by the Primitiue Church, and accounted among the *Apocrypha's*. Yet it is written that *Zepherinus* B. of *Rome*, in order the sixteenth approued them: as also, after him, this Conncell before mentioned, which (as they report) was ended in *Iustine* the II. his time, *Constantine* the IIII. his sonne In briefe, all flotes vpon incertaine grounds, neither doe they agree in the number of the Cannons, for some hold 50. others 60. others 84. in which number indeed they are extant. Whereby

by it may easily by coniectured that more were added by degrees, and afterwards (though proceediug from many) comprehended vnder one title. It is written that then also the Archbishop of *Rauenna*, subiected himselfe to the Bishop of *Rome*, who before that (but most especially after the translation thither of the Exarchy) would yeeld nothing at all to him.

To *Constantine*, *Iustinianus* his son succeeded; he by reason of his nonage and inexperience, misgouerned the Common-wealth, and breaking the leagne which his father had made with the *Sarazens* and *Bulgart*, was brought to that pinch as he himselfe was constrained to sue for peace to both of them. At length. being thrust out for his crueltie, and banisht with his nose cut off, *Leontius* succeeded, hauing

Iustinian, lib. 685; an: 10

Leontius, 695 an. 23

beene prisoner two yeares vpon suspition of affecting the Empire. In the time of those broiles, the *Sarazens* inuade *Africa*, but were within two yeares after chased out thence by force of armes. The *Roman* souldiers forsaking the garrison in *Africa*, sith the Emperour sleighted ouer all affaires with negligence and carelesse-nesse, and fearing lest they should againe bee expelled by the *Sarazens*, who were then exceeding strong: create one *Tiberius* Emperour. He marches with his forces to *Constantinople*, where winning the City, takes *Leontius*, cuts off his nose, cast him into prison, and constitutes a new Exarch in *Italy*, And whilst all matters were caried, after this boisterous manner, the *Sarazens* laying hold on this fit opportunity, march out of *Egypt*, with an huge Army: and againe surprise

Tiberius Apsimarus 966 an. 7.

prise *Africa*, and *Lybia*, and welnigh all *Hispaine*.

Iustinianus (hee whom I aboue spoke of, expeld and bannisht by *Leontius*, (by helpe of *Tribellius* King of *Bulgaria*, at length takes *Constantinople*, and therein *Leontius*, and *Tiberius*, whom hee put to death: after which hee raigned sixe yeares cruelly, prouing also ingratefull to King *Tribellius*, and at length ioyning battle with *Philippicus Bardanes*. to whom the souldiers had reuolted, both he and his sonne *Tiberius* were there slaine. Pope *Constantine* pronounced this *Philippicus*) for difference in Religion) a Schismatick whose eyes being afterwards bluckt out by his owne seruants, *Anastatius* the I I-was his successor.

Iustinian the II.a. gaine, 706 *An.6,*

c First causing them to be caried vp and downe the city bound in cords, then trampling vpon their necks and lastly beheading them.

Philippicus Bardanes 712. *an.2. m.9.d 7. Anastatius* the II. 715 *an.1 m.3.*

Hee sent a strong Nauie to the *Rhodes* to make warre with the *Sarazens*, constitu-

ting an eccleſiaſticall perſon Generall thereof: whom the ſouldiers refuſing to obey, a mutinie aroſe and one *Theodoſius* of obſcure parentage was created Emperour, wo changing the voyage, marches to *Conſtantinople*, takes the City, and confines *Anaſtaſius* (who he ouerthrew in battaile) to a Monaſtery: but not long after being expulſt by *Leo* Lieutenant of his forces, hee alſo betakes himſelfe to a Monaſticall life. About this time which was in the yeare of Grace 717. the *Moores* with their whole powers breake into *Spaine*, and subdue it, *Rodericke* being then King of the *Hiſpaines*, whom the *Gothes* had elected. The *Sarazens* in *Leois* raigne, hauing ouerrunne *Thrace*, beſiege *Conſtantinople* both by ſea and land for three yeares ſpace; but at length (being well nigh deſtroyed by the plague)

Theodoſius Adramitteus, 716. *m.* 7. *d.* 16.

Leo Conon, 717. *an.* 24. *m.* 2. *d.* 25.

plague) were constreined to retire home. This *Leo* was a mortall aduersary to *Gregory* the II. Bishop of *Rome*: and charged his Vicar or Exarch in *Italy*, by all meanes to cut him off: but the *Lombards* defended the Pope, not for any loue they bare him, but to the end, that by these dissentions, they might enlarge their owne Teritories. For vpon this occasion they surprised many townes belonging to the Exarchy. Certaine of this *Gregories* Epistles to the Cleargy and Laity of *Thuringia*, are extant, whereby he admonishes them more and more to encrease in the knowledge of God: as also to the *Saxons* sharply deterring them from worshipping of Idolls, in which employment hee vsed on [e] *Boniface* his helpe, whom he had sent into *Germany*.

A part of *Saxony*, where the City *Erfordstands*

[e] An Englishman borne in *Deuonshire*

The Emperour *Leo* throwes

all ſtatues and Images of Saints out of Churches, and enioynes the Pope alſo to doe the like: but hee not onely diſobeyes, but alſo denounces ſharpe puniſhment againſt him perſeuering in his purpoſe. To *Leo*, his ſon *Conſtantine* of that name the V. ſucceeded, ſurnamed *Copronymos*, of the ſame Religion with his father. Hee, ſetting forth with a great Nauy againſt the *Sarazens*, for recouery of *Alexandria* in *Ægypt*, vnderſtanding by a meſſenger of the inſurrections hatched at home, and of *Artabaſtus* the new elected Emperour retires to *Conſtantinople*, takes the City by force, and puts out *Artabaſtus* his eyes. Hee alſo, as his father *Leo*, liued in vehement diſcord with *Gregory* the III. Biſhop of *Rome*, who forthwith ſending his *Nuntio's*, excommunicates him: and they being caſt in priſon, he

Conſtantine the V. 741. an. 9. m. 1. d. 27.

hee made a decree in the Conncell thereupon aſſembled: That, whoſoeuer ſhould hereafter demoliſh the Images of Saints, or contumeliouſly abuſe them, ſhould bee vtterly excluded from the Communion of the Church: after this with all diligence and endeauour hee erected Images in diuers Churches, and as farre as he could, ſumptuouſly adorned them.

After *Gregory* the III. *Zacharias* ſucceeded. An Epiſtle of his is extant to one *Boniface* a Biſhop in *Germany*; the ſame man, as it appeares, whoſe helpe *Gregory* the II. vſed, as a little aboue mentioned. *Zacharias* ſatisfied his requeſts and permitted Biſhoprickes at *Merburgh*, *Bamberg*, and *Erphord*; and alſo gaue him leaue to goe to *Charlemaine*, *Charles Martel* his ſonne, who was deſirous to haue a Councell held

in some City of the French Kingdome: and that hee might diligently reforme the abuses of the Church, but most especially remoue adulterers, and those that had many wiues from the order of Priesthood: for sithence after the vndertaking of the holy Ministery, they ought not to haue or touch so much as one wife, much lesse at one and the same time, they should haue more, for *Pauls* words, that the Bishop should bee the husband of one wife, is to bee vnderstood not of the time present, but past, to wit, that he who desires to bee admitted into the ministeriall function, should haue no more wiues then one.

To this Epistle *Charlemaines* Edict (who stiles himselfe Duke of the French) is annexed: wherein hee ordaines that a Councell should be held euery yeare in his presence:

and

and commands that adulterous Priests, and whoremongers should be remoued out of their places: and likewise prohibits them from hunting and hawking, and charges them not to maintaine any whore at home: but concerning wiues not a word.

From this time *Aistulphus* King of the *Lombards* required a tribute from the *Romans* sharply menacing them in case of non-payment. *Stephen* the II. of that name, then Bishop of *Rome*, seeing hee could not stop his mouth neither with flatteries nor rewards sues to *Constantine* the Emperour for ayde, but no helpe comming from him, hee sollicites *Pipin*, lately (as wee below shall mention) made king of the French; to lend him his hand. Hee marching with an Army into *Italy* besieges *Pauie*, and compells *Aistulphus* to come to compo-

sition, but the Enemy, after *Pipins* returne home, growne more kene, againe takes armes; whereupon *Pipin*, agine solicited, marches into *Italie*; then at length *Aistulphus* surrenders the Exarchy to *Pipin*, in which Country those Cities are of chiefe account, *Rauenna*, *Fauentia*, *Casena*, *Forli*, *Forlimpopoli*, *Bologna*, *Reggio*, *Parma*, and *Placentia*.

It is written that *Pipin* deliuered all this Countrey into the Popes hands, though the Emperour first required him to restore them to him, as belonging to the Empire, not to the Church of *Rome*.

Leo the IIII 775. an. 4. m. d. 26.

To *Constantine*, his son *Leo* the IIII. succeeded: Hee vndertooke one only expedition into[f] *Syria*, where discomfited, he retires home, and not long after dyed, of the same religion with his father, leauing behind him his sonne *Constantine* the

f Against the *Saracens*.

the VI. who by reaſon of his nonage, not of ability to raigne, his mother *Irene* gouerned the Common-wealth, but he waxen warmer in 5 yeares, depoſing his mother, tooke the Empire vpon himſelfe, with no leſſe inſolency then cruelty: whereupon certaine conſpiracies being practized againſt him: he ſet a mulct, amongſt others, vpon his vncle *Nicephorus*, and put out his eyes. And at length he himſelfe by the meanes of his mother, was ſerued with the ſame ſauce, within a while after dying of griefe; and thereupon the ſway of gouernment returned into her hands. who afterwards in the fourth yeere of her Empire was depoſed and ſent into exile, *Nicephorus* whom we before mentioned, was her ſucceſſor.

g 20 yeeres of age.

Irene the Empreſſe 797 *am* 4.

In the meane time whileſt matters were thus tumultuouſly

ly caryed at *Conſtantinople*, the name of *Charles* King of the French, grew famous. For hee hauing finiſhed the warre in *Aquicania*, at the requeſt of *Adrian* Biſhop of *Rome*, marches into *Italy*, and as his Father *Pipin* repreſſed *Aiſtulphus* King of the *Lombards* as aboue ſayd, ſo hee, after a long ſiege tooke *Deſiderius*, *Aiſtulphus* his ſucceſſor, a heauy foe to *Italy*, and *Adrian* the I. As alſo excluded his ſonne *Adalgiſius* out of the Kingdome, and chaſed him quite out of *Italy*. For the Emperours of *Rome*, by reaſon of their farre remote abſence (I meane at *Conſtantinople*) euer ſince *Conſtantine* the great, and being likewiſe hindered, not onely with forraigne wars, but alſo with ciuill & domeſticall diſſentions, in a manner neglected *Italy*, or at leaſtwiſe could not conueniently protect it, eſpecially the

the *Lombards* raigning there: Futhermore, moſt of them alſo, being at deadly diſſention with the Biſhops of *Rome*, as we haue formerly ſpecified, out of their hatred towards them, were not moued at this proſperous eſtate of the *Lombards*. For this cauſe the Popes prouided forraigne defence, and becauſe no houſe was in thoſe times, of more renowne and puiſſance, then that of the *French* Kings, in regard of the greatneſſe of their noble exploits, to them they flie, as to a harbour in time of trouble. And after this manner, *Adrian* dying, *Leo* the third, who ſucceeded him, hauing many aduerſaries at *Rome*, ſued to *Charles*, *Pipins* ſon: who, at his fourth acceſſion to the City, was by the Pope and all the people proclaimed Emperour, which happened at the ſame time, when nought but factions

Charles the Great, 801 *an.* 13 *m.* 1, *d.* 4.

ons swarmed at *Constantinople*, insomuch as the very time it selfe, and state of the Common wealth, seemed to administer the cause and occasion of this change.

Thus therefore the Empire of the west, came to the *Germanes*: for without all doubt, *Pipin* and *Charles* were *Germanes*. This was in the eight hundred and first yeere after Christs birth.

Nicephorus was ouercome and slaine by the *Bulgars*, and his scull made a drinking bowle by *Crumnus* King of the *Bulgars*,

Now, after *Nicephorus*, the Emperours of the East were tossed with continuall warres for at first; the *Bulgars* often; incountred them, then the *Sarazens* issuing out of *Affrica*, tooke the Ile of *Candie*, as afterwards *Sicilie*, and made hauocke in *Asia* farre and wide: and last of all the *Turks*, a people of *Scythia*.

The Emperours of *Greece*, from *Nicephorus* to *Constantine Palæologus* the last, are reckoned

ned to 50. some whereof were women: but most of those were sloathfull. And in *Constantine Monomachus* his raigne, the *Turkes* from a base originall, by degrees getting ground more and more, began to wast *Asia*, and daiely increasing their power, at length made vp a Monarchy, but no new or fifth one, but sprouted out of that part of the *Romane* Empire, lying in the East. Of which Monarchie, *Ottoman* was the head, about the yeare of Christ, 1309.

Ottoman, first Monarch of the *Turkes*. an. 1300

Afterwards, *Mahomet* of that name the second, great Grandfather to *Solyman*, who now swaies the Empire, taking *Constantinople*, & putting *Constantine Palæologus* the Emperour before mentioned, together with his whole family, to the sword, vtterly extinguish the name, and succession of Emperours of our Religion,

gion, in those parts. And the *Turkes* to this day hold *Asia*, *Syria*, *Egypt*, *Mesopotamia*, *Iudea*, the *Rhodes*, all *Greece*, *Thracia Bulgaria*, *Macedonia*, *Illyricum*, both the *Mysias*, and of late, almost the other part of *Hungary*, and some part of *Affrica*.

In former times, the Churches of *Ierusalem*, *Antioch*, *Constantinople* and *Rome*, contended amongst themselues for primacie, but especially the two last, as wee formerly shewed: but the *Turke* ended that controuersie, and set such a confusion in those [h] three places, that their is not a tract remaining of a Church or Christian Congregation: and the matter it selfe shewes, of what colour the face, and what the state is of that [i] Church now remaining, which now (those *riuals or eye-sores being remoued) alone triumphs.

[h] *Hierus. Antioch, Constantinople.*

[i] *Rome.*

**Æmulis.*

There.

Therefore hauing ſhewne after what manner the other part of the *Roman* Empires body, lying in the Eaſt, vtterly decaied and fell into the hands of ſtrangers: it remaines that we ſhould alſo briefly vnfold, how that part in the Weſt, quite periſhed, and found new Lords. But here by the way, let vs conſider, after what a wonderfull kinde of mockery of fortune, that maieſticall glory and ſublimity of the Empire, was from thoſe *Romans* and ancient families, brought into the hands of ſtrangers, and ſome of them of baſe degrees ſome being *Spaniards*, others originally of *Pannonia, Dacia, Dardania, Dalmatia, Gallia, Thrace Cappadocia.*

But chiefly it is worth obſeruance, how doubtfull and miſerable the eſtate of theſe Emperours was: for their dignity and ſafety conſiſted not in

in the power of the Senate, or people, but of the Legions and ſouldiers : ſo that it may ſtand for a great wonder, that any would vndertake this charge ſo dangerous and obuious to iniuries : For from *Caius Caſar*, (who was murthered in the face of the Senate) till *Charles* the Great, about thirty of them were ſlaine, foure whereof killed themſelues : alwaies ſomething was wanting in them, which the ſouldiers deſired, who could abide the good no more then the wicked : but vpon the leſt occaſion rayſing a tumult, cut off thoſe, whom ſometimes they had drawne vp to that height of honour againſt their wills, as for example, it was *Ælius Pertinax* his caſe. The Senate ſtood in feare of the Emperour, but the Emperour himſelfe was ſwaied by the will, and in a manner, the

the becke of the rascall souldiers. And this presumption they tooke vpon them after *Caius Cæsars* death, especially those veterane bands, which he had imployed in *Gallia*, *Hispaine*, and *Africa*.

Hereupon *Cicero* deploring this: Couragious they are indeede, sayth hee, but in regard of the memory of those exployts, which they atchieued for the liberty of the *Romans* and the dignity of the Common-wealth two fierce, and recall all our Councell to their violence.

The end of the second Booke.

IOHN SLEIDAN of the foure chiefe Monarchies. OR, The Key of History.

The third Booke.

BEfore we ſpeake of *Charles* the Great, (to whō I told you the Empire of the Weſt was befallen) ſomething muſt bee vnfolded concerning the *Germanes*, from whom hee deriues his originall. And firſt of

of all it is manifest, beyond all doubt, that the *Germanes* very oft passed ouer the *Rhyne*, and entred the *Gallea's* there to seat themselues in regard of the goodnesse of the soile. For the *Teuthons* broke into the Prouince of *Gallia*, and were put to flight by *Caius Marius* the Consull. Afterwards the *Aruernes* and *Heduies* quarrelling about principality, the *Germanes* (hired with pay from the *Aruernes* and *Sequanes*) marched thither at first indeed but with indifferent forces, but increasing by degrees, in *Arcouistus* their Kings raigne, possessed a good part of the country: but them *Caius Cæsar* ouerthrew in battell: and some yeeres after, when he made warre against the [k]*Eburons*, a people of *Gallia Belgica*, the *Germanes* againe march ouer the *Rhyne*, with intent to beat backe the Roman

[k] Inhabiting *Luke* beyond *Brabant*.

Roman Armie, but were by him discomfited, at the meeting of the Riuer *Maze* and the *Rhyne*. Many yeers following, they contained themselues within their owne bounds, because the *Roman* Emperours held them in play by warres: yet as oft as they could lay hould on fitting opportunity, slackt not their owne commoditie, but continually wasted *Gallia*. After this manner, *Gallienus* being Emperour, one no lesse careless then voluptuous, they made an in roade, and by little and little, sprung vp to that potencie, that the Emperour *Probus* had mucha doe to repell them. *Iulianus* also, *Constantius* his Lieutenant, made warre against them Afterwards, when *Honorius* was Emperour, the *Gothes* broke into *Gallia*, to whom the Emperour (detained by sundry warres)

warres) granted the Conntry of *Aquitania* to inhabite On the other fide, the [l] *French-Germance*, making their way through [m] *Belgia*, vanquiſhing the [n] *Treuires*, [o] *Menapians*, *Eburons* [p] *Morines*, [q] *Nernians*, [r] *Amtians*, [s] *Bellouacans*, *Soiſſons*, ſeated themſelues in that part of *Gallia*, which retaines their name, and is called *France*, in which Country, *Paris* is the chiefe Citie, and not farre from thence ſtands *San-Denis*, afterwards conſecrated for the Sepulture of the Kings of *France* to this day. After this manner inlarged, hauing formerly poſſeſſion of a good pat of *Germany*, euen all the Country betwixt the Riuer *Maine*, and the *Rhyne*: they eaſily repelled not onely offred hoſtilitie, but alſo made warre vpon others. Beſides, the *Roman* Empire in *Aſia* and *Affrica*, daily more and

l Of *Frankenlandt*, then *Franconia* in *Germany*.
m *Holland*
n In and about *Triers*
o Of *Iuliers* or *Gulicke*
p Part in *Flanders*, part in *Picardie*.
q Of *Turnay*.
r *Vriſet* of *Picardy*.
s The beginning of the *French* Kingdome in *Gallia*, about 421.

and more sliding away, and the *Lombards* wasting *Italy*, they almost extended their dominions quite through *Gallia*: and after many of their Kings had raigned there in successiue course, ae length the Crowne came to *Pipin* also, and to his sonne *Charles*. *Charles Martel Pipins* Father, who was not king himselfe, but ouely one of the Nobles and Gouernour of the Pallace, or as they are commonly called, *Majors* of the house: vanquished the *Bauarians*, and *Suenians*. For as the writers of the *French* Annals deliuer it, the Kings there, for some yeers together, had nothing at all besides there title, the principalitie of gouernement belonging to the Gouernour of the Kings house. For those Kings degenerated from the worth of their Predecessors, and gaue themselues ouer to pleasure, reie-

reiecting the care of the Commor-wealth: whereupon the Gouernor of the Pallace bore all sway, and by how much greater the kings negligence was, so much more hee augmented his authoritie. At length vpon this occasion, *Pipin* who was Gouernour in *Childrickes* raigne, (when the cause, as they say, came to, consisting before Pope *Zacharie*) got the Kingdome. Hereof is mention made in that decree which they name *Gratians*, to wit, that it is lawfull for the Pope to depriue Kings of their principalitie: but the title and inscription of that place is false, seeing there were two *Anastatio's* Emperours, and it cannot be referred to either of them; for the former raigned aboue. 200. and the other .37. yeres, before this happened: as also there was no Pope *Gelasius* in the later Emperors time

I thought good to adde this for the Readers aduertizement, that they may wisely and warily peruse the Papall records: for it is not one place alone which discouers this to bee their prime practice, so to fasten an opinion of antiquity vpon their lawes, that they may carry the more weight and authority.

Pipin, (besides his repression of the *Lombards* in *Italy*, at the Popes request, as before mentioned) commenced war also against the *Saxons*, and afterwards against the *Aquitanians*, whose Chiefetaine hee tooke and put to death: not long after, departing his life, they forthwith rebelled, and King *Charles* his sonne with much difficulty and infinite toile, at length made an end of that double warre. For he was in armes against the *Saxons*, full thirty three yeares during which

which warre, hee made other alſo: *Bauaria* likewiſe with their Cheifetaine *Taſſilo*, hee brought vnder his ſubiection, and in two expeditions againſt the *Lombards*, marching into *Campania*, ſubdued all *Italy*, and ſetled it with lawes; and reduced into ſubiection thoſe Cities of *Gallia*, lying vpon the Ocean, which *Caius Cæſar* calls *Armorica*, but now goe vnder the name of little *Britaine*, which refuſed any longer to pay yearely tribute to the Kings of *France*. In *Hiſpaine* alſo whither hee made an expedition with an Army againſt the *Sarazens*, victory attended him: but in his returne vpon the *Pyrene* Mountaines, by a ſtratagem receiued a ſore ouerthrow from the *Vaſcones*, a people of *Aquitaine*; notwithſtanding at laſt, after eight yeares warre, hee ouerthrew the *Hunnes*, then

u of Gaſcoigne.

in possession of *Pannonia*, and likewise by his Lieutenants composed *Bohemia*. And his last warre was against the *Danes* or * *Normans*, then with a great Navie forraging the mar time coasts of *Germanie* and *France*. By the atchieuement of those so famous exploits, he gained his sirname the Great. For, whereas before him, the *French* Kings onely held that part of *Germanie*, lying betwixt *Saxonie*, and the Riuer *Danow*, and betwixt the *Rhyne*, and the Riuer *Sala* to this he added *Sueuia*, and *Bauaria*; all *Saxonie*, afterwards both the *Pannonia's*, *Dacia*, *Istria*, *Ireland*, and the midland Country of *Dalmatia*: whereas also the *French* Kings had onely that part of *Gallia*, lying betwixt the *Rhyne* and the Riuer *Loire*, betwixt the Ocean and the x *Balearique* Sea: hee added all *Aquitania* all

*For the *Normans* originally inhabited *Norway*

xAgainst the Ilands of *Maiorca* and *Minorque*.

all the top of the *Pyrene* mountaines, to the Riuer *Iber*, and (which ſhould haue beene named firſt) all *Italy* from the *Alpes* to the furtheſt part of *Calabria*. And this done, he ſets forward to *Rome* the fourth time, where hee was proclaimed Emperour *Auguſtus*, by *Leo* the third, and all the people: after he had raigned thirty three yeares.

Thus the *Romane* Empire in the Weſt, rent almoſt into peece-meales, eſpecially from that time when the Emperours made choyce of *Conſtantinople* for their Court and ſets (as appeares out of that which we haue before mentioned,) was by the Emperour *Charles* reintegrated, and as it were a new body, re-aſſumed beauty and feature, after ſo many and ſo great Prouinces were reduced into one mans principality.

Nicephorus the other Emperour in the East, was much displeased hereat. but *Charles* by his humanitie and kindenesse, appeased him, and interchanging presents, both of them liued in amitie: and the certaine bounds of each Empire were set out.

Besides other assemblies, he had a Councell at *Rhemes*, wherin amongst many others, one decree was, that Bishop should diligently peruse the holy Scriptures, and Preach the Word of God. There was a Councell also held at *Mentz*, the yeere before his death: and others, some yeeres before, at *Tours*: *Chaalons* and *Arles*, about reformation of the Church, as they deliuer it: that liued in those times. Then constituting his sonne *Lewis*, heire of his kingdome and of the Empire, died at *Aix*, a towne in *Gallia Belgica*, aged, seuenty

ſeuenty yeeres, in the yeere after Chriſts birth, eight hundred and fourteene, after hee had beene Emperour almoſt fourteene yeeres, the firſt of any *Germane* aduanced to that dignitie, In his time, there were onely one and twenty Metropolitane Cities. as they call them, throughout *Italie*, *Germanie*, and *France*: as *Rome*, *Rauenna*, *Millaine* *Frinly* *Grado*, *Cullen*, *Mentz*, *Salizburgh*, *Triers*, *Roane*, *Sens*, *Beſanſon*, *Lyons*, *Rhemes*, *Orleans* *Vienna*, *Monſtier*, *Iuerdun*, *Burdeaux*, *Tours*, and *Burges* in *Berry*.

Pipin his Father committed the *Exarchat*, taken from the *Lombards*, into the Biſhops of *Romes* hands, as aboue ſaid, which indeed is ſo deliuered to memorie, and it is reported that hee directly gaue it to them, but that very many call into queſtion.

Eginardus one very familiar

1 Charles

with 1 him, and his sworne Scribe, writes, that hee more dearely esteemed of that Church, which they call St. *Peters* in *Rome*, then any other, and that a great masse of gold, siluer, and iewels, was transported thither, and vere many gifts sent from him to the Popes: for herein hee vsed extraordinary diligence, that by his memes and procurement, the City of *Rome* might inioy her ancient authority, and S. *Peters* Church might not onely remaine safe and secured vnder his patronage, but also flourish in wealth aboue other Churches: Thus much onely he writes, but of the donation of so many and such potent Cities, within the bounds of the Empire, not a word: nay, it is written, that after his fourth comming into *Italy*, when hee was created Emperour, hee ordered not onely the pub-

publike affaires, but also both ecclesiasticall and priuate concerning the Pope, the City of *Rome*, and all *Italie*. For when hee was not yet Emperour, but onely King of *France*, hauing vanquished *Desiderius* King of the *Lombards*, as aboue sayd: hee came to *Rome*, and had a Councell, in which (as their booke relates) *Adrian* the first together with the whole Councell, granted him the right and power of electing the Pope, as also disposing of the se Apostolique, as they tearme it, and confirming Bishops.

Eginardus attributes to this *Charles*, many vertues worthy of a Prince, as, temperance, modesty, frugality, loue to religion, learning, eloquence, and knowledge, not onely of the Latine, but also of the Greeke tongue: withall, his exceeding care and diligence

in educating, and nurturing vp his children to the same course He also, as it is written, founded the Academie of *Paris*, as well of his owne accord, as also by the instigation of [z] *Albinus* his Tutor for learning of the arts, as *Eginardus* reports. He also gaue *Germane* names to the twelue moneths, and to the windes, which they now vse, whereas before that time, as the same writer relates, the *French* vsed partly Latine, partly barbarous names.

[z] Commonly called *Alcoinus*, an *Englishman*, so *Bede* and others

And thus farre in preface-wise touching the *Germanes*, and the Emperour *Charles*; henceforward ile briefly run ouer and shew, after what manner this part of ths *Romane* Empire in the west, hard and sharpe restored and recollected by *Charles*; againe declined, which being diuided, fell into many mens dominions,

ons, who held the same, as their proper right, not acknowledging the fountaine from whence they flowed: Insomuch, as that Maiesticall and so much renowned sublimity of the *Romane* Empire, is nothing else at this day, then a certaine slender shadow of a great body, after it was shrunk from such an huge masse, to *Germany* one particle of *Europe*. Last of all, ile briefly explaine, how *Daniel* foretold this interchangeable course of Monarchies, and fall of the *Romane* Empire.

Now *Lewis*, *Charles* his son another *Germane* Emperour, renewed amity with *Leo Armenius*, Emperour of *Greece*: and Pope *Leo* dying in the third yeare of his raigne, his successour *Stephen* the IIII. comming into *France*, consecrated him at *Rhemes*. To this Pope, *Paschalis* succeeded, who

Lewis, 8. 14 an. 26. m. 4. d. 24.

4 Emperour.

who, (by reason the Emperour interposed not his authoritie) diligently and earnestly excusing the fact, alledged, that the papacie was obtruded vpon him, altogether against his will. The papall bookes haue it, that this *Lewis* the Emperour, confirmed to this *Paschalis*. and to the rest after him both the possession of goods, and also permitted a free election, that whomsoeuer all the *Romans* should judge fit for that dignitie, he should be accounted pope. But I see not what credence can be giuen to such kinde of writings as these: for they so iarre amongst themselues, and are so patcht together without all method, that it cannot bee vnderstood what should follow.

Lewis had three sonnes, *Lotharius* whom hee elected Collegue in the Empire and his Kingdome: *Charles* (who sue-

ſucceded his deceaſed brother Pipin) he ſet ouer *Aquitania*: and *Lewis* ouer *Bauaria*. vpon a rebellion raiſed, hee being taken by his ſonnes, and depoſed from his Kingdome, was confined to a Monaſticall life at *Compeigne* a towne of the *Soiſſons*. The *French* Annall writers report, that the eccleſiaſticall Prelates (whoſe hautineſſe and riot hee deſired to reſtraine), conuocating ſome aſſemblies at *Aix*, ſtirred vp thoſe broyles againſt him, and prouokt his ſonnes to put in practice this ſo impious a fact. But being ſet at liberty the ſixt moneth following, to the great contentment of the people, hee recouered his Kingdome and all more.

b In *France*

The Emperour *Lewis* depoſed by his owne ſonnes. *an.* 833.

Reſtored the ſixt moneth following.

Becauſe the place ſerues, let vs by the way take a view of the many Nationall Synods held in *France*; for next after that before mentioned at *Aix*, there

there was another *Troy* in *Champaigne*: after that at *Rhemes*, *Towrs*, *Digion*, *Paris*, *Lyons*, *Vienna*, *Auinion*, *Vierron*, *Orleans*, and many more in the same places, for when the affaires of the Commonwealth so required, the Kings themselues conuocated aswell the States Ecclesiasticall as others, for reforming of publike enormities. In like manner *Lewis* the twelth, at bitter enmity with *Iulius* the second assembled a Councell of his owne people at *Towrs* and *Lyons*, in the yeare of Grace, 1510. and 1511.

Lotharius 840. *an*, 15 *m*, 3. *d*, 10.

Now to the purpose, *Lewis* dying was buried at *Metz*, and *Lotharius* (then vp in Armes against his brothers) succeeded; which warre at length quenched, and a new diuision made, *Germanie* fell to *Lewis*, and part of *France*, from the Riuer *Maze* to the *Rhyne*:

to

to *Charles*, *France*, from the *Brittish Ocean*, and *pyrene* Mountaines to *Maze*: *Lotharius* (besides that he was Emperour) held *Italy*, and the prouince of *Narbon*.

To him his sonne *Lewis* the II. succeeded, who repressed the *Sarazens* breaking into *Italy*. In his raigne amongst others, *Adrian* the II. was pope, created (as their bookes haue it) contrary to the Emperours assent, by the *Romane* Nobility, Citizens and Clergy as they call them. For although the Emperours Deputies were in the City, yet were they not called to the Election: who taking it in ill and discontented part, receiued their answer, that it was not done in any contempt against the Emperour: but in caution for future times, lest that custome of expecting the Emperours Deputies at the popes Creation,

Lewis II. 855 *an.* 19 *m.* 10.

Creation, ſhould grow vp as neceſſary. They report that with this anſwere, they were not onely well pleaſed, but alſo in reuerence humbly ſaluted the Pope. Now here we may ſee a certaine wonderfull variety and inconſtancy in their writings: for if *Lewis* the I. granted them a free election, as they boaſt, and as it is mentioned a little aboue, why did *Lewis* the II. his grand-child take this for an iniury offered him? But howſoeuer the caſe ſtands, the title of that decree which is in *Gratians Centons*, is euidently falſe, for it is attributed to *Gregory* the IIII whereas hee departed his life, twenty and two yeares before *Adrian* the II. was made Pope. Did hee write a hiſtory when hee was dead of thoſe things which happened afterwards?

Nicholas the I. was the next before

before *Adrian*, A very long Epistle of his to *Michael* Emperour of *Greece*, concerning his power ouer all Churches: is extant. For *Ignatius* was remoued from his Bishoprieke at *Constantinople*, and *Photius* placed, without the Bishop of *Romes* consent: as also the Images were throwne downe, Hee therefore with all the vehemency he could exclaimes against this. Many of his decrees also are extant full of Papall Maiesty.

Charles King of *France*, as aboue sayd (notwithstanding his other elder brother *Lewis* the King of *Germanies* resistance) marches in all hast into *Italy*, and is consecrated by *Iohn* the eight Pope of *Rome*. In his second expedition into *Italy* at the Popes request, for repression of the *Sarazens* who had againe inuaded *Campania*: hee dyed at [c] *Mautna*. His son *Lewis*

Charles the *Bald* 875. *an.* 2. *m.* 2. [c] Poisoned by *Zedechias* a Iew.

Lewis the *Stammerer* 877 *an.2. m.6.d.5.*

Lewis surnamed the *Stammerer* was his succeſſour, but he raigned onely two yeares.

Charles the *Groſſe*, 879 *an.8.m.7*

After him the gouernment of the Empire came to *Charles* the *Groſſe*, ſon of *Lewis* King of *Germany*, who (his two brothers being dead) held all *Germany Italy*, and *France*, and chaſed out the *Sarazens*, who infeſted *Italy*: for a while alſo making war againſt the *Normans*, a people of Lower *Germanie*, then annoying *Belgia*: at length granted them that part of *France*, which to this day retaines their name. Next after him *Arnulphus* his brothers ſonne was Emperour, a worthy Prince. He marching into *Italy* to ſet Pope *Formoſus* at liberty from his aduerſaies: takes *Rome*, and tooke reuenge upon the Authors of that ſedition.

The *Norman*, firſt comming into *Normandy* in *France*.

Arnulphus 887 *an.22 m.1.d.19.*

In the time of his raigne, the *Hunnes* being chaſed out of *Scythia*

Scythia, breake into *Pannonia* and marching into *Germanie*, (*Lewis* the III. *Arnolphus* his ſon being then Emperour) got a notable victoty not far from the Riuer *Lech* and then ouerran *Bauaria Sueuia*, [d] *Francia*, and *Saxony* with bloodſhed robberies and fire.

d In Germany betwixt *Sueuia* and *Haſſia*.

Arnolphus Emperor, a Councell of two and twenty *Germane* Biſhops, was held at *Triburia* ſome times a towne vpon the banke of the Riuer *Maine*, where amongſt many other, one decree was, That no man ſhould ſell a burying place for the dead, and that no Layman, as they call them, ſhould bee buried within the Church.

About this time a mighty vproare burſt forth through out *Italy*: For *Berengarius* and certaine other Nobles of *Italy*, loaden with multiplicity of fauours from *Charles* the *Bald*, conſpired againſt *France*, at what

what time *Charles* the *Grosse* raigned: but their attempts there, prouing frustrate, they bend their minds for *Italy*, which (by long and mutuall conflict, as it is common) they harraze with mercilesse out rages. At length the victory falling to *Berengarius*, hee got the Kingdome of *Italy*, where after hee had taken *Lewis* the Emperour he put out his eyes, as histories relate. About this time also (that no parcell of calamity might bee wanting) the *Sarazens*, *Africans*, and *Hungars*, most outragiously ouerrunne *Italy*.

Thus whilst the state of most beautifull Religion, vnder the *Berengarians*, *Hugo*, *Rudolphus Lotharius*, *Albertus*, and certaine others, was so dolefull and miserable, and *Lewis* the Emperour dying in the time of those broiles; the *Germanes* but more especially the *Saxons*,

ons and *Francons*, proclaime *Otho* Prince of the *Saxons*, and *Thuringes* Emperour, but hee, ſtricken in yeares, perſwades them to take *Conradus* Duke of *Franconia*, who being created Emperour, ordered all affaires according to *Othoes* direction: and ſoone after *Othoes* death, when he himſelfe was very dangerouſly ſicke, calling together his prime Nobility, requeſtted them to acknowledge *Otheos* ſon *Henry* then abſent, for Emperour. This was that *Henry* vulgarly called *Henry* the [e] *Falconer*. Thus, we ſee after what manner the Imperiall ſplendor and dignity, fell from the *French* and *Charles* the Great his lineage, to the houſe of *Saxony*.

Conrade I. 911. an. 7. m. 6.

Henry the *Falconer*, 919. *an.* 17.

[e] Becauſe of his great delight in hawking.

Theſe two Emperours, *Conradus* and *Henry*, were not conſecrated, as they call it, by the Biſhop of *Rome*, and for that cauſe

cause are left out by many: moreouer it is written, that this *Henry* neglected the Popes offered ceremony of consecration, and that hee should say, that hee was content with the acceptance and suffrages of good men.

Within a while after this, *Arnolphus* the Euill Duke of *Bauaria*, intended to bring about the sway of gouernment into his owne hands: whereupon forces being mustered vp on both parts, when both the Armies stood in battell ray at *Ratisbon*, the Emperour calls him out to priuate parley, putting him in minde how he was created Emperour by the most part of the people of *Germany* and dehorting him from ieoparding the liues of so many thousand men, most whereof were innocent and ignorant of the cause of that warre: changed his intention, and so broke

broke off the battell.

In like manner *Burchardus* Duke of *Suenia*, rebelled, but (ſhaken with the Emperours puiſſance) came to compoſition.

The *Hungars* againe ſpoile *Saxony*: but after their chieftaine was taken, make a nine yeares truce. The Emperour after this, trayning vp his ſubiects in feats of Armes, vanquiſhed the *Dalmenincians*, takes the City of *Prague*, together with *Wenceſlaus* Duke of *Bohemia*, making that countrey tributary to him. In maine battell he ouerthrew the *Hungars* then againe (after the truce ended) breaking into *Saxony*: and diſtributed the tribute which the *Saxons* paid them, amongſt the poore.

Hee intended to haue gone to *Rome*, but hindered by ſickneſſe, conſtitutes his elder ſon *Otho* heire of the Empire. Hee com-

Otho the Great, 936 an. 36. n. 10 d. 6.

commenced wars many yeares together against the *Bohemians*, then in rebellion: as also vanquisht and put to flight the *Hungars*, who then also stri-
king ouer the *Rhyne* in the *Vangions* Countrey, had made an inroad into *Franconia*, with intent to march on from thēce and pillage in *Saxony*. Hee brought *Burgundy* vnder his subiection, and afterward marching with a great Army into *Italy*, and vanquishing the *Berengarians*: there maried his second wife *Aditheida Luitholdus* his sonue hereat displeased, practises treacherie against him, hauing Coadiutors euery where in readinesse to serue his plots, and amongst the rest *Conradus* Duke of *Suevia* his sisters husband. But his father besieging him at *Ratisbon*, he (first brought into distresse) humbly craues and obtaines pardon.

Of Wormbs

After

After this the *Hungars*, having forraged *France*, breake into *Germany* in greater multitudes then at any time before, and encampe themselues neere *Ausburgh*, on that place, which takes name from the Riuer *Lech*. The Emperor marching thither with the *Saxons*, *Franks*, *Suenians*, *Bauarians*, and *Bohemians*, after a doubtfull and long battle put almost all the enemies forces to the sword, and caused some of their Chieftaines to bee hanged. Then returning into *Saxony* after he had setled the affaires there, makes a new expedition into *Italy*: but before his iourney constituted his sonne *Otho* Collegue in the Empire. At length arriuing at *Rome*, he assembles a Councel, where hee sate president, and deposed pope *Iohn* the XII. for his offences, in whose place he appointed *Leo*, of that name the VIII. A decree of his

is extant inserted in the Papall Law, where hee sayes, that hee conferres to *Otho* the Emperour and to his successors for euer, the authority of chooſing Popes, disposing of the See Apostolike, and confirming of Bishops: as also pronounces a most seuere punishment against those, who (not expecting the Emperours approbation) consecrate Bishops. See here another Decree, contrary to some other before. After this there is the forme of an oath added, by which (as they report) the Emperor *Otho* bound himselfe to Pope *Iohn*, but its not added who this Pope *Iohn* was, nor of what number in name either this *Iohn* or *Otho* were. And surely it is wonderful that matters of such importance and moment, shou'd bee so negligently put into writting.

Now if *Otho* the I. tooke this oath, then this obiection may hold against him. That where

whereas in this forme beforementioned, amongst other things, hee sweares not to procure any danger to the Popes life, nor to abrogate his honor and dignity: but how can this appeare, when as he, as we said before, remooued *John* out of his place, and ordained another? Let him that can reconcile this.

Otho, by reason of the new broyles, marches againe into *Italy*, where hauing setled the affaires, and returning home dyed about the beginning of May, and was buried at *Maidenburg*, in the yeare of Grace, 974. In regard of his noble exployts, and surpassing prowesse Hee's stil'd the Great.

Henry D. of *Bauaria*, rebelled against *Otho* the II. but the sword reduc'd him to his duty *Lotharius* was then King of *France*, whose brother *Charles* was by the Emperour creat'd

Otho II. 973. an. 10. m. 8. d. 2.

Duke of *Lorraine*, vnder condition that hee ſhould bee a * Leige-man of the Empire. *Henry* the Emperour (as the Annals report) got this Prouince from *Charles* the Simple King of France, and entailed it to his ſucceſſours in order. But *Lotharius* diſpleaſed hereat, on a ſudden leauying an Army ſpeedily meets him at *Aix*, and had almoſt diſcomfited the Emperour before hee was aware. The Emperour to reuenge this affront, muſters vp forces, & marching on as far as *Paris*, at length (not without great blood-ſhed on both ſides) concludes a peace. Returning home, and from thence making an expedition to *Rome*, hee commenced warre againſt the Greekes, who held *Calabria* and *Apulia*: where, after his Army was defeated, he was intercepted by Pyrats, as he fled by ſea, but not being knowne

Beneficiarius,

knowne who he was, they dismisst him vpon a summe of money payd in hand: and so returning to *Rome*, besieges *Benuento*, with the remainder of his forces, takes and sets fire on it. And not long after, wounded with a dart in a battle against the *Greekes* and *Saracens*, departed his life, and was buried at *Rome*.

To him his sonne *Otho* succeeded by consent of the Nobility, and was consecrated at *Aix*. Hee created one *Bruno* a *Germaine* Pope, afterwards called *Gregory* the fift. But *Crescentius* a Cousull of *Rome*, set vp *Iohn* Bishop of *Placentia* in opposition to him. The Emperour therefore comming to *Rome* inflicts a heauy and ignominous punishment vpon *Crescentius* and his complices, and caused *Iohn* of that name the XVII. his eyes to bee put out.

Otho. II 983. *an.* 17 *m.* 5. *d.* 28.

The Emperour in regard of the perpetuall dissentions about succession in the Empire, ordained with the popes helpe. That certaine of the prime Nobility in *Germanie* should bee authorised with right and power of electing the Emperours, lest that any man hereafter should set vpon that dignity as hereditary. This Decree was made about a thousand yeares after Christs birth.

The Electoral Princes of *Germany*, constituted about the yeare of Christ 1000.

Robert then raigned in *France*, a prince that loued peace and learning. The Annalls extoll him for building many Churches and amply endowing them as also going in pilgrimage to *Rome*.

This Emperour *Otho* granted to *Bolzslaus* Duke of *Polonia*, regall dignity and immunity, as their Annalls hath it. This therefore is the beginning of the Kingdome. *Otho*, after this, returning out of *Italy* dyed

The beginning of the Kingdome of *Polonia*. 929.

ſ dyed. The next Emperour after him, was *Henry*, of that name the I I. Duke of *Bauaria*, kinſman to *Otho* the great D: of *Saxony*, and Emperour. He, hauing ſetled a peace in *Germany*, and drawne on ſome of his aduerſaries into amity by his extraordinary kindneſſe, and ſubdued other ſome: marched into *Italy*, there reſtoring *Apulia* to the Empire, which the *Sarazens* had taken, then, after his conſecration by *Benedict* the V I I. ſending away his Army into *Germany* He himſelfe, taking his iourney through the *Sequans* Countrey came to an enterueiw with *Robert* the *French* King, where a confirmation of amity was eſtabliſhed on both ſides. This Emperour was greatly loued of the Clergie, for hee was very liberall towards them.

After *Henries* deceaſe, when

g He was poiſoned by a paire of gloues giuen him by *Creſcentius* (aforeſaid) his widow. *Henry* II, or the *Lame*, 1002 *an.* 13. *m.* 5. *d.* 29.

the Electorall Princes could not agree, there was an interraigne or vacancy a [h] while. At length *Conradus* Duke of *Franconia* succeeded. Hee enforced *Stephen* King of *Hungary* to conditions of peace. And hauing setled the affaires of *Germany*, makes speed into *Italy*, which was almost all ready to rebell; And at first he laies siege in *Millaine*, then going to *Rome*, where consecrated by *Iohn* the XVIII, hee's proclaymed *Augustus*. with the peoples acclamation. Then imposing a mulct vpon those that attempted the innouation, hee composed *Italy*, and returned into *Germany*. But new troubles againe kindling in *Italy*,, he marches thither and punishes the Authors of that Conspiracy, the Archbishop of *Millaine* being one amongst the rest,, neither desisted hee till hee had brought it

[h] For two yeares. *Conradus* 1024. *m.* 14 *m.* 10 *d.* 12.

it all vnder his subiection. Hauing dispatcht there, hee returnes home and dyed at *Vtrecht*, a Towne vpon the frontiers of *Batauia*. His son *Henry* of that name the III. succeeded him, by consent of the Electorall Princes. Hee suppreſt the *Bohemians* then rebelling, and made them tributary: re-inthronized *Peter* King of *Hungary*, once or twice depoſd by his owne subiects: and quieted the whole Countrey, though not without great loſſe of his own men.

i *Holland*

At this time hapned an exceeding great vproare at *Rome*, for Three contended for the Papacy, and what they attempted was all by ſiniſter practices thoſe were, *Benedict* the IX. *Siluester* the III. and *Gregory* the VI.

The Emperour hereupon marching thither, hauing after

a ſiege, taken the City. he calls a Synod, and conſtitutes *Suitgerus* Biſhop of *Bamberg* Pope who changing his name, was called *Clement* the III. from whom, ſoone after, the Pope receiued conſecration.

Then againe the Citizens tooke oath not any wayes to meddle with the Popes election, without the Emperours aſſent. Italians ſet an peace againe, ſoone after the Emperours returne into *Germany*, Pope *Clement* dyed, and was buryed at *Bambergh*. The Emperor vpon notice hereof creates *Boppo* Biſhop of *Friſingen*, Pope.

This was *Damaſus* the II. who holding the place but 23 dayes, *Leo* the IX. Biſhop of *Tull*, ſupplied the deceaſeds place. Acertaine parcell of an Epiſtle of his is extant, wherin he ſaies, it is not lawfull for a Biſhop, Prieſt or Deacon, to

forsake his wife for Religion sake, but it is fit they should find her with such necessaries as belong to naturall sustentation: notwithstanding, in case she vse carnal copulation, in case not lawfull: fithence *Paul* saies *He had power aswel as the other Apostles, to lead about a wife*; which place he thus interprets. That the Apostles had their wives alwayes with them for this intent, that thay should be maintained, together with them, by those, whom their husbands instructed, in the Christian Religion and faith: and not that they should exercise the office of wedlocke, or lye together: therefore Saint *Paul* thought fit to vse the word *lead about*, and not *lye with*. 1 Cor. 9.

In the yeare 1050, *Leo* going from *Rome*, assembled a Councell of 42. Bishops, at *Mentz*, wherein the Emperor sate

sate President. He dying within three yeares after, *Gebehardus* Bishop of *Aistet*; by the Emperours assent succeeded him: this was *Victor* the II.

The Emperour marching into *Italy*, after he had setled the affaires there, returnes into *Germanie* comes to treaty with *Henry*. the first of that name, King of *France*. dyes in *Saxenie*, and was buried at *Spire*, the Pope and many other Nobles being present at his death. He had a sonne called *Henry*, verykyong, bnt was constituted Emperour a little before: notwithstanding, his Mother and the Bishop of *Ausburge* gouerned the Empire. Within a while after Pope *Victor* the II. dyes, after hee had held the Papacy little aboue two yeares. To him, *Fredericke* of the house of *Lorraine*, called *Stephen* the IX. succeeded Hee also within few

k Seuen yeares old: *Hemy* IIII 1056 *An.* 49. *m.* 10. *d.* 3.

few moneths after dying at *Florence*: One *Benedict*, of that name the X. by helpe of his friends, and without the Emperours assent, sets vpon the papacie. The *Romans* liked not well of this prancke, who to acquit themselues, dispatching their Ambassadour to the Emperour, proffer the same fidelitie to him, which they had performed to his Father, and intreat him to constitute a lawfull Pope; *Benedict* hereupon depriued, the Emperour gaue them *Gerhardus* Bishop of *Florence*, this was *Nicholas* the II. The Princes of *Germanie* grudged much, that the Common-wealth should be gouerned by a woman, the Emperours mother, as aboue said: vpon which occasion, a meane was inuented to draw away her sonne from her: whereupon the Archbishop of *Mentz* and *Cullen* had the prime managing

naging of all affaires, to them the Archbishop of *Bremen*, one in exceeding great favour with the young Prince, was now and then conioyned, who alone ouer-ruling him, disposes of Ecclesiastical promotions to himselfe and his friends, especially *Abbeies*: and to keepe the flame of enuy lower, perswades the Emperour to conferre them likewise vpon other Princes. In the meane space, *Nicholas* the II. dies, in whose place the Emperour constitutes the Bishop of *Parma*: but hauing not at all acquainted the Senate of *Rome* herewith, and in that regard some troubles likely to inlue: *Alexander* the II. Bishop of *Luca* was elected. Betwtxt those two a sharpe controuersie followed, but *Alexander* hauing the longer sword, carried it.

The Archbishop of *Bremen* onely

onely bearing all sway with the Emperour, incensed his fellow Bishops against him, by whome at length he was depriued: and though shortly after restored to his place, yet hee long suruiued it not. And the Emperour, (necessity constraining him (sith all in a manner complained of the state of the Common-wealth: requested *Anno* Archbishop of *Cullen*, to vndertake the Gouernement. But he, seeing insolencie and iniquitie, bore great sway, excusing his age and sickenesse, afterwards resignes vp his office to him. This young Emperour now grown to two and twenty, being by nature prone to vice, beganne to increase his lasciuiousnesse, and despising his wife *Bertha*, kept many Concubines. Then raising Castles all ouer *Saxony*, intended to bring them into seruitude, and restrained not his

his officers, who vsed much excesse and insolencie.

Herepon the *Saxons*, as well the Nobilitie as Clergie, knitting a league, betooke themselues to Armes, in vindication of their libertie: which, after much adoe, and long intercession, they lay downe againe, he first satisfying their demands, and making a narrow escape by flight in the night time. *Alexander* the II. dying the *Romane* Nobilitie, without the Emperours assent, set vp *Hildebrand*, called *Gregory* of that name the VII.

The Emperour vpon notice hereof, expostulates with them by his Ambassadours. and withall admonishes the pope to giue him satisfaction, herein. Hee makes answer, that hee was, drawne to it against his will and when hee neuer dreamt of it, and that he would not haue beene inaugurated

gurated before Hee, and the rest of the Princes of *Germany* had approued of his election. Thus hee appeased the Emperour, and was afterward by his consent, confirmed. Then dispatching his Legates into *Germany* to certaine Bishops willed them to assemble in Councell: but they refused it alledging, that it was contrary to the custome and priuiledge of their Nation.

This designe miscarying, Hee in some certaine Councels held in *Italy*, decrees, That Massing Priests shall haue no wiues, but shall dismisse them, or else leaue their places: sending this his decree to the Bishops in *Germanie*, vrges earnestly, vnder a penallty denounced, to haue it established: but the Clergy, as they call them, and whole streame of Massing-Priests, stiffely reclaime calling him an heretike that

that propounds such doctrine, sithence Christs words are, *That all should not receiue this word.* And *Paul* sayth, *They that cannot containe let them marry*, But this Pope not regarding Christs word, and coutemning *Pauls* authority, would constraine men, to reiect the vse of mariage, which is lawfull and ordained by God and to burne in most filthy flames of lust, and rush into manifest lewdnesse, but [illegible] would rather leaue their Ministery then matrimony.

Matth. 20, 1 Cor. 7.

He neuertheleſſe, as before, ſending his agents, preſſing it on, and ſtanding ſtifely vpon it, the Archbiſhop of *Mentz* began to hearken to him; who at firſt gently admoniſhes thoſe in his iuriſdiction, and afterwards aſſembling a Councell at *Erphord*, would flatly inioyne them, but an vproare ariſing, he eſca-

ped

ped death very narrowly.

The Emperour in the meane time, to reuenge the ignominie, receiued the precedent yeare, when, beſieged by the *Saxons*, hee wrought out his ſafety by flight in the night time: makes ready for warre, and violating the league, which hee had made the yeare before, muſters vp all the forces hee could poſſibly make, and in the moneth of Iuly, ſetting vpon the *Saxons* (who by their frequent Ambaſſadours had, but in vaine, ſolicited him for peace) diſcomfits them in many battels, not without great loſſe of his owne men, no ſmall number of the prime Nobility being then ſlaine. Purſuing his victory, hee harmes their country farre and wide, and by his Ambaſſadors, exhorts them to yeeld: willing them to hope for all fauour from his benignity: but that

failed,

failed, though a certaine few obeied. *Bucco* Bishop of *Halberstadt*; and *Otho* Duke of *Bauaria*, banniſhed by the Emperour, had the chiefe manna-ging of this warre.

The Archbiſhop of *Mentz* againe ſolicited by *Gregory* the VII. aſſembles another Councell, and makes a new propoſall about the Clergies not marrying, but was entertained in like manner as before, and ſtood in great hazard of his life, whereupon hee thought it his beſt courſe, vtterly to lay off this deſigne.

The *Saxons* thus put to flight, the Emperour diſmiſſes his forces, and the auxiliarie Princes: but vpon condition, that they ſhould againe preſent themſelues in armes before him, on the two and twentieth day of *October* following. When that day came, a great many appeared, and amongſt

ngſt them, many Biſhops, not ſo many in number as fore. There againe the *Saxons* ſend their Ambaſſadours peace, incamping themſelues at *Northauſen*. The Emperour ſends them anſwer, that way to peace, was to yeeld themſelues: ſo they, though ming rather to doe any ing then this, yet certaine inces (which were ſent as ceeſſors and Ambaſſadors the Emperour) promiſe them very largely, that ey ſhould not thereby incurre any indammagement ther of liberty or goods: at ngth aſſented, and the Biſhop of *Maidenburgh*, and *Halberſtadt*, *Otho* Duke of *Bauaria*, *Magnus* Duke of *Saxony*, and *Fredericke* Corunt *Palatine*, yeelded themſelues into his hands, and likewiſe, ſoone after, many of the reſt of the Nobility.

The

The Emperour at first commits them to custody, not without fauour: but afterwards flying from his promise, caused them to be carried into seuerall places, how bee it, not long after: hee set Duke *Otho* not onely at liberty, but also intreated him very familiarly, but for the rest, both kept them prisoners: and gaue their goods for a prey to others.

Then raising new Castles and Forts, wholly bends himselfe against the safety and liberty of the *Saxons*, and in his absence committed the whole charge of gouernment to *Otho* Duke of *Bauaria*, by parentage descended from the *Saxons*. After this hee, constituted a Bishop at *Bambergh*, as also at *Cullen*, and an Abbot at *Fulden*. Now a little before this, hee was accused to the Pope, and most especially for selling Ecclesiasticall promotions.

ons, whereupon the Pope, by his Legate, cites him to make his appearance at *Rome*, within a certaine time, and to giue his answere in the cause, But he calls a Synod of Bishops and Abbots at *Wormes*: there it is decreed, that the Pope, for that hee came to the papacie by sinister meanes, should bee depriued of his place, and forth with publishes this at *Rome*, by his Ambassadors. But the pope not a whit moued hereat, both excommunicates him, and also more especially the Bishops of *Mentz*, *Vtrecht*, and *Bambergh*, hauing formerly excommunicated certaine of his familiar friends, by whose counsell hee supposed him to haue beene drawne on to this practise. Furthermore, the Princes of *Germany* deepely offended at the Emperours demeanour and disposition: especially for that, contrary to his promise,

Henry the IIII. excommunicated by *Gregory* the VII. *alias Hildebrand* an 1076.

promise, hee persecuted the *Saxons* with so obstinate hatred, conspire against him, and so much the rather, because he was interdicted the Church. whereupon they dismisse the surrendred prisoners, (the custodie whereof was committed to them by the Emperour) iudging them not to bee tied to him in any bond of allegiance.

At the same time certaine Nobles in *Saxonie*, stirring vp, and drawing on others into their partie, surprise those Castles euery where raised, some by force and command, other some by dedition; and dismisse the Garisons in safetie, first binding them by oath, neuer after to beare Armes against *Saxonie*.

The Emperour vpon notice hereof, in subtle policie, sets at libertie the rest of the imprisoned princes, to the

end

end that they, returning into *Saxony*, might doe him faithfull ſeruice in puniſhing the Rebels: for hee ſaw there was no other meanes to bring about his wiſhed ſucceſſe, with more facility, then by kindling factions amongſt them, and renting one from another, but the euent was not correſpondent: for they, after their returne home, well acquainted with his qualities, with ioynt mindes and might reſolued to fight for the common libertie; and *Duke Otho* alſo, forſaking him, did the like: yet the Emperour was full fraught with good hope, hauing broken through *Bohemia*, into the Country of *Campania* ayded with *Bohemian* forces: but when hee was certified of the *Saxons* coniunction, and their Army in readineſſe, deſpairing victory, retires.

Then at length the Princes of *Germanie*, appointing the day, met together in great abundance, thither also repaires the Popes Legate, who vnfolding the causes of the Emperours excommunication, exhorted them to create another, which otherwise they were about to doe of there owne accord: for, making a rehearsall of his life, euen from his tender yeares, they pronounced him to bee the blemish, dishonour, and reproach of the Empire; and decreed, that (in regard he had afflicted the Common-wealth with most grieuous calamities) hee should bee depriued of his gouernement. Hee, brought into these straights, beganne to deprecate and entreat by his Ambassadours, when after much adoe this condition was proposed. That hee should stand to iudgement, and subiect himselfe

ſelfe to the Popes cognizance, whom they would ſend for to *Auſpurge* againſt the firſt day of February. That hee ſhould procure his abſolution within a yeare after the date of the excommunication, wherein if hee fayled, the whole cauſe ſhould fall diſmiſſe his forces: In the meane time liue at *Spire*, as a priuate man, with a ſmall traine: not meddle in any publike affaires, nor aſſume the *k faſces*, or Imperiall Ornaments, till the controuerſie were lawfully decided. Hee accepts the conditions, and whileſt hee liued at *Spire*, bethought him-ſelfe of going downe into *Italy*, to worke his mature peace with the Pope. Taking his iourney together with his wife and little ſonne, through *Burgundy* and *Sauoy*, in moſt ſharpe winter, not without extreame difficulty and danger of life: at length

k Bundles of rods vſed in ancient time to be carried before the *Roman* Conſuls.

arriues in *Italie*, where he was kindely entertained, by the Nobles and Bishops of that Country, they thinking that hee came thither, incenst with anger against the Pope. The Pope in the interim, at the request of the *Germane* Princes, began his iourney, comming on some part, till hee vnderstood of the Emperours arriuall. Whereupon hee staies to acquaint himselfe with the state of the cause. The Emperour forth-with sending a sumptuous Embassie, wherein were some gallant Ladies, amongst which, one was accounted some-what too obsequious to the Pope: makes suite to the Pope for his absolution: at first hee seemed very loath, and sayd hee could doe nothing therein, except the accusers were present: but after much a doe, ouercommed at length with intreaties, hee refu-

refused not. How beit the Emperour before hee came into the Popes presence, staied full three dayes in the lower roomes, court yard, and without the gates, where the Pope then was: being clad in meane and simple apparell, without any regall ornaments bare foot, and fasting from morne to night. The fourth day having admittance, the Pope propounds to him these conditions: that hee should stand to his iudgement, answeare the Princes their accusation, and if convicted, leaue his Empire, and neuer afterwards attempt any reuenge: in the meane time liue as a priuate man, and not meddle in any publike affaires, release his subiects from their loyalty and oath: remoue from him his Councellors and familiars in case hee shall doe any thing to the contrary, that benefit now

granted him to become void, and the princes to haue free libertie, presently thereupon to chooſe them another. when the Emperour had approoued of theſe conditions, the pope ſaies Maſſe, and to purge himſelfe from all pretended crime, takes the vnleauened bread, which they call the *Lords Body*, inuocating fearefull execrations vpon his owne head and eſtate, if all theſe troubles were not wrought by his aduerſaries: and then he exhorts the Emperour (if he thought the crimes obiected againſt him by the princes, were falſe, or any injury offered him) to doe the like, and take the other part of the conſecrated bread: but hee excuſed himſelfe, ſhewing that hee could not conueniently doe it, and the pope vrged him no further, but entertained him with a banquet, and ſo courteouſly

teouſly diſmiſt him. The Nobles of *Italy* vnderſtanding of thoſe proceedings, were vehemently vext, that hee ſhould ſubmit himſelfe ſo baſely and ignobly to him, who by moſt lewd practices had ſet vpō the papacie, who had polluted all places with bloodſhed and adultery. In him (being the patron of Iuſtice, the Altar and Bulwarke of lawes) they had grounded all their hopes, and had not onely contemned the excommunication, but alſo for his ſake affronted the pope in bitter enmitie: and now, for him, by this, directly the moſt diſhonourable of examples, to brand the Empire to all poſterity, with this ſo deepe and indelible infamie, and come in fauour againe with him, the publike enemie both to Church & Common-wealth. Thus, and much more after this manner they chafed, and

were minded to elect the Emperours little ſonne, carry him to *Rome*, and depoſe the pope.

The Emperour here with acquainted, ſaw no meanes likelier to pacifie them, then by fleeing from the league, and ioyning with them; which fact quite confounded the popes plots, inſomuch as hee was inforced to breake off his intended iourney into *Germany*. And which was next to be done, by his Legates, ſignifies to the princes of *Germanie*, how matters ſtood, and withal exhorts them to haue a care of the Common wealth. This was in the yeere, 1077.

They therefore create *Rudolphus*, Duke of *Suenia*, Emperour, whom the Archbiſhop of *Mentz* conſecrates. But *Henry* returning into *Germanie*, muſters vp forces: *Rudolphus* doth the like, who chiefly relied

relied vpon and from the *Saxons*; but in the third conflict receiuing a deadly wound, departed his life.

Preſently after this victory the Emperour cals a Diet at *Breſcia*: there a decree paſſed by the Biſhops then preſent, as well *Italians* as *Germanes*, that *Gregory* was not lawful Biſhop of *Rome*: whereupon *Victor* the II. Archbiſhop of *Rauenna*, was appointed in his place: vpon this decree the Emperour haſtens to *Rome*, beſieges *Gregory*, who at length eſcapes by flight: and then confirmes *Victor* the II. by whom he is conſecrated.

Gregory the next Pope after him, dying, *Vrbane* the II. at *Gergoie* a towne of the *Aruernes*, vulgarly called *Claremont* where there was a meeting of many Princes, perſwades *Philip*, of that name, the firſt, then King of *Frances*, to the *Sarazen*

(His right hand was ſtricke off in battel, and being brought to him, lying vpon his death bed, he cried out, ſaying *This is the hand wher with I confirmed my promiſed loyaltie to the Emperour, &c.*

warre: of which, afterwards, *Godfrey* Duke of *Bullogne*, went Leader, who had much happy ſucceſſe, and recouered *Ieruſalem*. *Paſchal* the II. *Vrbans* ſucceſſor, was troubleſome alſo to the Emperour, who for that cauſe intending to goe downe into *Italie*, firſt aſſignes his ſonne for his ſucceſſor. But he, prickt forward by others, and forgetting that dutie ingrafted in vs by nature, droue his Father into extreame diſtreſſe; hauing the Pope and very many Princes of *Germanie*, his Complices, both in couucell and in the fact. And hereupon hee was created Emperour, of that name the V. his Father afterwards dying miſerably at *Leige*.

Henry the V. 1106. *an. D. m. 8. d. 16.*

Some few yeeres after, hee marches into *Italia* with a great Armie, to make an end of the controuerſie, betwixt the

the Common-wealth of the Empire and the Papacie, and hewing out his way with his ſword, at length, arriues at *Rome*.

Now from *Conſtantines* time, the Emperours had the collation of Eccleſiaſticall honours and dignities: but the Popes growne more wealthie, at length greatly repined hereat, as a thing vnmeet; and from this fountaine iſſued almoſt all the iarres betwixt them. Now this Emperour ſtanding vpon his owne right and power, a great tumult aroſe at *Rome*, in ſo much as the Emperour raiſed vp in the night, was conſtrained to aide his owne men, who fell by the ſword, all the Citie ouer. But theſe factious perſons once ſuppreſt, he takes *Paſchal* the II. and diſmiſt him not till he had giuen him ſatisfaction by entring into a league: but after the Emperour

was

Henry the V. excommunicat*ed* by *Paſch* the II. 1115.

was returned into *Germanie*, the Pope flies off from the league, whereto he had ſworn in moſt ſacred words, and excommunicates the Emperour, which ſtirred vp many of the *Germane* Princes to rebellion, and amongſt the reſt more eſpecially the Archbiſhop of *Mentz*. The Emperour marching downe into *Italie*, ſends his Ambaſſadours to the Pope, about a peace. But whileſt the matter wes in hand, the Pope dies: To him, *Gelaſius* the II. ſucceedes. The Emperour, for that he was not called to the election, marches to *Rome*, and ſets vp another. *Gelaſius* thus depoſed, excommunicates both him, as alſo the Pope by him conſtituted: and the Emperours in regard the Popes Legates ſolicited the *Germanes* to reuolt, was conſtrained to retire home. But *Gelaſius* dying in the interim, the *Romans* chooſe

choose *Calixtus* the II. Hee thrust him out of his place, whom the Emperor in hatred to *Gelasius*, had created, and after much intercession, compounds with the Emperour.

To *Henry* the V. *Lotharius* of the house of *Saxony*, of the name the II. succeeded. Him *Conradus* Duke of *Suevia* opposed, storming that the sway of government was falne againe into the *Saxons* hands: who marching into *Italy*, to settle himselfe in that Kingdome, whilst *Lotharius* in the interim held *Germany* fast) destitute of aide, returned home, and made his peace with the Emperour.

Lotharius I 1125. an. 13. d. 18

Innocens the II. was then Pope of *Rome*. Him *Anacletus* resisted: to whom, because he was descended from noble parentage, *Innocent* was forced to yeeld, but imploring the Emperors ayde, was restored.

The

The Emperour returnes into *Germany*, where hauing setled the affaires, hee marches downe againe into *Italy* with a mighty Army, subdues some Cities then in rebellion, and amongst the rest *Ancona* and *Spoleti*, chased *Roger* King of *Sicilie* out of *Apulia* and *Campania*, and (as fame speakes of him) scarce any Emperor since *Charles* the Great, atchieued more worthy exploits throughout *Italy*. It is written that then also, the ciuill law which as we mentioned, was collected by *Iustinian* the Emperors command, hauing been borne downe by stormes of warre, was brought to light againe.

Conradus III. 1139. *an* 12. *m:* 10. *d:* 15.

Couradus D. of *Suenia*, succeeded him: at what time *Henry* sirnamed the *Proud*, was Duke of *Bauaria*, and by mariage with the Emperour *Lotharius* his daughter, Duke of *Saxony* also:

also: who affecting the Empire, and plotting much mischiefe against the Emperour, was proscribed and his lands giuen to others. But Duke *Henry*, hauing recouered *Saxony*; as hee was marching into *Bauaria*, dyed, leauing behind him his sonne: in fauour of whom, the *Saxons* rose vp in rebellion against the Emperour, and not so onely, but *Welpho* also, brother to the deceased Duke *Henry*, by force of Armes challenged *Bauaria*, excluding *Ludolphus*, vpō whom the Emperour had conferred that Prouince. A little aboue wee mentioned how the Emperour expelled *Roger* King of *Sicilie*: but whilst *Germanie* was thus turmoiled, King *Roger* laying hold on the opportunity, inuades *Sicilie*, and chases out the Emperours Deputie: and then spurres on *Welpho* with large promises to proceed

ceed and hold the Emperour in play: The King of *Hungarie* too, tooke the same course, who also stood in feare of the Emperour.

At length the Emperour marching out against the *Sarazans*, lost his army, and returnes home: from whence intending to goe downe into *Italy*, hauing all in readinesse, dyed at *Bamberg*. *Frederick Ænobarb* or *Red-beard*, Duke of *Suevia*, of that name the first, succeeded him, a man of heroicke spirit. He in the beginning of his raigne, made a peace among the Priuces of *Germanie*, and ended the controuersie about *Saxony* and *Bauaria*, afterwards with a maine Army, marches downe into *Italy*, sets a mulct vpon the *Veronesses*, who had contemned him: and for example sake hangs some of the chiefe vpon gallowes. He commanded

m Commonly called *Barbaroſſa*. *Frederick Barbaroſſa* 1152 *an.* 38 *m.* 3 *d.* 7

ded a Court of Guard to bee kept about him neare *Placentia*, by all the Leige-Princes of the Empire: beſieges *Millaine*, raſes *Aſta*, and layes *Deitona* euen with the ground. Going to *Rome* is conſecrated by *Adrian* the IIII. ſuppreſſes the rebellious Citizens, ſubuerts *Spoleti*, and made a great ſlaughter: ſubdues the *Lombardes* and hauing broken the ſnares laid for him by the *Venneſes*, returnes into *Germany*, inflicts an ignominious mulct upon the Prince *Palatine*, who in his abſence had raiſed ſome commotions: and after that he made the Duke of *Bohemia* King.

The beginning of the kingdome of *Bohemia* about 1200

In the meane ſpace the *Millanois*, practiſed many inſolent outrages againſt their neighbours and againe reared vp *Deitona*, demoliſhed by the Emperour: whereupon hee, returning with a ſtrong army: ſacks

ſaks *Millaine*, by the ayde of the *Cremoneſſes*, *Pauians* and *Nouarians*. The City thus taken, the multitude, at the Princes of *Germany* their interceſſion (to whom they had peticioned) was ſpared. All *Lombardy* was reduced into his ſubiection: from hence (hauing ſetled the City with Lawes) hee remoues to other people there about. After his returne they rebell, contemne the Lawes by him eſtabliſhed, and demoliſht the Forts by him raiſed: whereupon againe marching thither; he harrazes the whole Country, and raiſes all places within their Dominions.

In the meane ſpace, mortall conſpiracies were in hatching againſt him all *Italy* ouer: In which Pope *Adrian* before-mentioned, was one: who, as ſoone as hee had abſolutely reſolued to excommunicate him a dyed. The

a Drinking of water wherein a flie was drowned.

The Emperour marching into *Italy* the third time vtterly ouerts *Millaine*, puts the Author of the rebellion to death, and compells the reſt of the multitude to goe into exile: then beſieging the City of *Rome*, loſt a great part of his Army by contagious ſicknes. For that cauſe raiſing his ſiege, and placing gariſons throughout *Hetruria*; ſetting ouer at *Spoleti*, *Ancona* and *Rauenna*, ſuch as hee pleaſed ſhould gouerne the Common-wealth, he returnes into *Germany*.

pope *Adrian* dying, two contend for the papacy, *Victor* and *Alexander* the III. the Emperour being abſent, who indeed enclined more to *Victor*: but *Alexander* firſt excommunicates his Competitour, and afterwards (the diſſention increaſing) the[b] Emperour alſo.

The *Millanois* perceiuing this

[b] Afterwards when the Emperour came to him to *Venice* for his abſolution, the Pope trode vpon his necke, and cauſed the place in the Pſalmiſt to bee ſung, Thou ſhalt tread vpon the Aſpe and Baſilisk, &c. The Emperour exclaiming that he did not this honour to him but to S. *Peter*, the Pope replied, To me and to *Peter* too.

this occasion breake into rebellion, and in many places in *Italy* expell the Emperours Deputies, hanging some of them vpon gallowes. The Emperour herevpon returning into *Italy* fought a hazardous battle with them. The Pope was Copartner in the warre, who fled to *Venice*. At length when peace was concluded by truce, hee makes an expedition into *Asia*, against the Enemies of the christian religion, where going into a River to wash himselfe, was by force of the streame ouer-whelmed and drowned.

Henry VI 1190, *an*, 8. *m* 2, *d*, 22.

His sonne *Henry*, of that name the VI. was his successor He (after *William* the sonne of *Roger* King of *Sicilies* death) hauing beene twice in *Italy*, conquered *Apulia*, and *Calabria*, and taken *Naples*, subdues *Sicily*, placing strong garrisons there, in regard of the incon-

inconſtant diſpoſition of that Nation. Then hee conſtitutes certaine Nobles ouer *Rauenna*, and *Ancona*; and throughout *Apulia* and *Hetruria*: ſoone after, hauing aſſigned his ſon *Fredericke*, as then an Infant, for his ſucceſſour in the Empire: hee went into *Sicily* by conſent of the Princes of *Germany*, and there ended his life *Fredericke* his ſon being as aforeſayd, in reſpect of his age, but a Childe, all men in a manner deemed it fitter to take his vncle *Philip*: but *Innocent* the III. Pope of *Rome*, moſt vehemently withſtood that. How be it the Princes diſagreeing in their choyce, when ſome would create *Philip*, others *Otho* Duke of *Saxony*, a great vproare thereupon enſued, eſpecially about the coaſt of the *Rhyne*: But *Philip* partly by force of Armes, partly by his exceeding humanity,

n Falling into a burning feuer by a poyſoned potion giuen him (as it was ſupdoſed by his wife

nity, drew on his aduersaries into subiection, and forthwith made his peace with the Pope whom by experience hee had found a bitter Enemy.

Otho IIII 1208. an. 4. Not long after, he was murthered in his Chamber, and *Otho* Duke of *Saxony* before mentioned was his successour: who incurred the Popes displeasure, (being formerly his most entire friend (and was at length excommunicated by him: whereupon a Diet assembled, the Elector all Princes solicited by the Pope to create another, call home out of *Sicily* *Frederick* the King thereof, *Henry* the VI. his sonne, to whom, (as a little aboue i tis mentioned) they had giuen allegiance, being then an Infant.

Him the Emperour *Otho* meets, with an Army at the *Rhyne* to stop his passage, but was discomfited, and returning into *Saxony*, dyed, as it was sup-

ſuppoſed, of griefe. And thus was *Frederick* made Emperour of that name the II. Grandchild to *Frederick Ænobarb* or *Red-Beard*, by his ſonne. *Fredericke* the II. 1012. *an.* 11

Innocent the III. before ſpoken of, had a Councell at *Rome*, called the *Laterane*, there amongſt others, thoſe decrees paſſed.

That the *Chriſme* and *Euchariſt*, which they call the *Hoaſt*, ſhould bee kept vnder Locke and Key.

That a priuate confeſſion of ſinnes ſhould bee made once euery yeare.

That an election made by the ciuill Magiſtrate, in ſpirituall promotions, ſhould be of no force.

That thoſe of Eccleſiaſticall Order ſhould not, without cauſe, promiſe fealty to thoſe that are called Lay-men.

That the Lawes made by Princes ſhould not preiudice Churches. That

That Eccleſiaſticall perſons ſhould bee exempted from all contribution.

That Tribute ſhould not be paid before Tenths.

That the Reliques of Saints ſhould not be ſhowne forth of a Casket.

About theſe Decrees there followed a great diſſenrion, betwixt the *Greekes* and *Latines*, for the *Greekes* would not touch thoſe Altars whereon the *Latines* had offered vp the *Hoaſt*, till they had waſhed and expiated them, as alſo of a new baptized thoſe whom the *Latines* had baptized Hereuponit was decreed that they ſhould returne to their mother Church of *Rome*, whereby there might bee one Fold, and one Shepheard: in caſe they obeyed not, to bee (after excommunicatio n) degraded from their Or ler.

The Emperour goes to *Rome*, and

and is consecrated by *Honorius* the third. Hee subdued those Rebells, which were spred all ouer *Italy*, and proscribes some of them. Many whereof fled to *Rome*, and implored the Popes ayde. This gaue occasion of great discord, for the Emperour tooke it most hainously that his aduersaries should haue their harbour and habitation there. The rancor raging hotter, Hee by consent of the Princes, assignes his sonne *Henry* his successour in the Empire; and summons the Princes to a Diet at *Cremona*: but being hindered entrance there, by the Pope, and the *Lombares* factions, returnes into *Apulia*: and within a while after the Pope dyes, to whom *Gregory* the IX. succeeds, who excómunicates the Emperour for not performing his expedition against the Turkes, whereto he had bound

Frederick the II. excommunicated by *Gregory* the IX.

bound himselfe by vow.

The Emperour deprecating this offence and purging him selfe; when nothing could preuaile, hee marches to *Rome*, deposes the Pope and inflicts a heauy mulct vpon his Complices: then calling another Diet at *Rauenna*; is hindered by the fugitiue Pope, who had stirred vp enemies against him in euery place, At length the Emperour, after his wife was dead, that he might performe; his promise, and prouide for the Common-wealth, sets forward on his expedition into *Asia*: But the Pope whilst he was absent: makes warre, and seizes vpon *Apulia*. The Emperour hauing good successe, recouered many places, and amongst the rest *Hierusalem*: being certified of the state of *Italy*, concluding a ten yeares truce with the enemy, returnes with his Army, and easily

recouers his owne Countries. The Pope fortifies himselfe by a new league, with these Nobles of *Italy*, on whom the Emperour had set a mulct, and then againe excommunicates him for entering into truce with the enemy. The Emperour louing quietnesse, by his Ambassadours treats for peace, which with much a doe he obtained, and so hee returned into *Germany*. But the Pope not able to leaue his old guise, dismantling *Viterbo*, againe excomumnicates the Emperour, who hereat incensed beyond measure, posts into *Italy*, in raging and wrathfull manner, and punishes all the Rebels thoughout *Hetruria*, *Vmbria*, *Lumbardy*, and the Cuntrey bordering vpon *Po*: whereupon the Pope ingeminates his excommunication, and conioynes in league with the *Venetians*. The Em-

perour coasting through *Italy*, hauing in a manner reduced it all into his subiection, layes siege to *Rome*, and not long after, Pope *Gregory*, dyes, hauing first summoned a Councell of his owne adherents, at *Rauenna*, whither notwithstanding they could not haue accesse, all passages being blockt vp by the Emperour, insomuch as certaine of them were taken.

This was the Pope that patcht together the Decretall Epistles, as they call them, which are a great part of the Pontificiall Law, loaden with multiplicity of Commentaries; wherein it may seeme wounderfull, that such men there should bee that will take so much paines as to adhere to those, not onely inconuenient, triuiall, fooliſh, but also ridiculous workes, as fast as if they were a kinde of Oracle: and spend all their labour and time in

in interpreting, explaining and garniſhing them: as though they were hired to that end, to defend other mens folly and error, with there beſt vigilancy and induſtry, and to looſe the reputation of their owne modeſty, in other mens impudency. That decree, which goes vnder *Gratians* name, in diuers places, amongſt other paſſages, hath theſe.

The Rule of the Church of *Rome*, which is the bleſſed *Apoſtle* S. *Peters* ſeat: muſt bee followed.

It is not lawfull to hold a Councell without permiſſion of the Biſhop of *Rome*.

The Lawes of the Church of *Rome*, are to be obſerued, as pronounced by *Peters* owne mouth.

What yoke the Church of *Rome* impoſes, though it be not tolerable, it muſt be endured.

The Ministers of the Church ought to vow chastity, that is they should not mary.

It is lawfull for him, that hath not a wife, to haue a Concubine.

If the Pope bee negligent and remisse in his office, hee may hurt indeede, aswell himselfe as others: notwithstanding hee cannot bee iudged by any man, becauſe hee himselfe is to be iudge of all men.

The Emperour ought tobe ruled by, and not rule ouer the Pope.

All mortall men besides, may bee iudged by men, but the Pope, *Peters* succeſſour by God alone.

It is lawfull for the Pope to releaſe ſubiects, from their loyalty and oath, whereby they are bound to their Prince.

In *Gregories* Decretall Epiſtles, and in *Boneface* his ſixt booke of Decretals, the *Clementines*

mentines, and *Extrauagants* as they call them: it is set downe there amongst other things; That the Popes authority is not subiect to the Decrees of Councells.

It belongs to the Pope to approue of the elected Emperour or to reiect him, if hee bee not fit.

There are two great lights which gouerne the world, the Sunne and the Moone: The Pope is instead of the Sunne, and the Emperour, of the Moone. Bishops may deale more mildly with those that haue offended by adultery, and other such crimes, as being of lower nature.

The Pope onely, hath cognizance concerning the priuiledges of the Church of *Rome*.

The bones of excommunicate persons already buried, ought to bee diged vp and throwne away.

The Pope may depose the Emperour from his place and Magistracy.

The Emperour is bound to performe allegiance and fealty to the Pope, by oath.

It is iust, that Ecclesiasticall persons, should, be exempt and free from all cost, molestation and charge.

A man may bee declared an Heretique after his death, and his goods bee confiscated.

The sonnes of heretiques ought not to bee admitted to any place of gouernment either ciuill or ecclesiasticall.

It is necessary to saluation, that all men bee subiect to the Pope of *Rome*.

Those few places onely are drawne out of an immense heape: and what kind of stuffe they are, there's no man that is well in his wits, but may perceiue.

The Law is, that men of deepest

deepeſt learning ſhould define the ſame. Soueraigne reaſon is grafted in Nature, which commands thoſe things that are to bee done, and forbids thoſe that are contrary. And all lawes ought to haue reference to the common good. And the Law-maker ought to haue the like affection towards the people and Common wealth, that the father hath towards his owne Children: but what likelihood hereof is there in any the beforementioned places? but for them, not onely to excuſe thoſe fopperies, but alſo to garniſh, adorne, and illuſtrate them, with new Commentaries, and rather to babble out any thing, then ſuffer their dignity to bee impeached, I pray you what groſſe impudencie is this but lle ſting no deeper.

If pride, auarice, ambition,

of bearing rule, and ignorance of learning drew them on, to make such decrees: if they themselues vary in opinions, nor will one bee tyed to anothers lawes, because endued with equality of power: pray thee, why doest thou macerate thy selfe in straightning those crooked and contrarizing decrees: I omit that Ocean, or rather sincke, I meane that part of the papall law, containing the sale of benefices as they cal them, and consecrated goods: for who is able to reckon vp their deceipts and colluſions; no not they themselues, that haue beene factors many yeares together in this kind of traffick, do sufficiently vnderstand and know all the trickes: when new ones are daily inuented. But this argument requires both another time, and a booke of purpose: now therefore let vs returne to our purpose. As

As *Frldericke* the Emperour so also *Lewis* the IX. King of *France* inuaded *Syria* and *Egypt* with an army, who afterwards [o] dyed at the siege of *Tunis* City, in the yeare of Grace, 1270.

In his raigne, *William* Bishop of *Paris* rayſed a queſtion about Eccleſiaſticall Benefices: which cauſe being publikely diſcuſt, his opinion tooke place that it was not lawfull for any man to hold more then one; but it is ſufficient to haue ſpoken onely and writ downe ſuch decrees as thoſe.

To *Gregory*, *Innocent* the IIII ſucceeded, vpon whom, as it were by hereditary ſucceſſion the Emperours diſpleaſure fell. Whereupon calling a Councell at *Lyons*, he ſummons the Emperour, excommunicates him for not appearing, deprriues him of his dignity, exhorting the Princes of *Germanie*, to chooſe

[o] Of the plague. *In Africa*, where formerly (as ſome ſay) *Carthage* ſtood.

choose another, and this his decree (which amongst others is in priuate) as also certaine of the Emperours Epistles, to seuerall Kings are extant, wherein he demonstrates at large, the Popes iniquitie, and his owne innocencie.

The Emperour was minded to goe to *Lyons*, and trie his fortunes: but a new rebellion breaking forth throughout *Italy*, turnes all his forces that way: where, good successe failing him, he returning into *Puel*, began to languish, and at length died. Some say hee was poisoned, others, strangled by his bastard sonne *Manfred*, who afterwards inuaded *Italy*.

At that time liued the famous Lawier, *Azo* after whom, the whole streame of writers followed; who violating that sharpe and feuere-edict of the Emperour q *Iusti-*

q Commanding his *Code* onely (into which as aboue said the whole law was contracted) to be obserued.

uiax,

nian, filled the world with an innumerable cõpany of books; from whence wee muſt now ſeeke thoſe points, which thoſe Ancients handled moſt copiouſly and learnedly.

For one man compiles anothers workes, ſo that there is no end or meaſure of writing: and all ouerflowes in contrary opinions, in ſo much as the old mans ſaying may properly take place here; who hauing asked three Lawyers their aduiſe; *you haue done brauely*, ſaith he, *I am a great deale further to ſeeke then before.* I omit the quidditles which are daily deuiſed in abundance; for the Comedians ſaying falls right here: that craft ſtarts one miſchiefe in the necke of another. *Cicero* complaines, that many worthy ordinances were ſetled by lawes, but thoſe for the moſt part were corrupted and depraued by Lawyers inuentious.

uentions. What if hee were now liuing, and saw those *Pyramides* of bookes, and our moderne practice, and that sacred repository of the lawes, thus filthily polluted, and miserably contaminated? Howbeit, as God indeed hath within our memory, brought all other Arts to light againe, so hath hee rayſed vp many men, who being furniſhed with the help of good learning, thinke those paines taken in this behalfe, not to be repented of, being to reſtore this ſubiect moſt beautifull, and altogether neceſſary for the ſociety of mankinde; yea, this gift, euen heauenly, drawne out and conuaied from the mid-fountaines of Philoſophy, to it's former ſplendor and equity; which their endeauours merit not onely publike commendation, but alſo remuneration.

After his death, there was a vacancy

vacancie for almoſt 22. yeeres first one, then another being elected, who not withſtanding, held not the ſway of gouernement in thoſe troubleſome times. In the meane time the Kingdome of *Naples* fell from the Emperour *Frederickes* houſe into the hands of the *French*, and afterwards *Sicilie* alſo. For the Popes relied vpon the *French* power, though ſoone after moſt cruell warres inſued about thoſe Kingdomes betwixt the houſe of *Arragon* and the houſe of *Angiers* in *France*, but that appertaines not to this place.

A vacancie in the Empire for the ſpace of 22. yeers after *Frederick* the II. his death

When the Commonwealth had floated in this ſtate, as aforeſaid, for ſo many yeers together, *Rudolphus Habſpurgh* is created Emperour. He in the beginning of his raign, appeaſed thoſe commotions ſpread throughout *Germanie*. And after ſome Diets ended, marches

Rudolphus Hobſpurgh 1273. *an. 1. m 9 d. 16*

marches out against *Ottacar* King of *Bohemia*, then in rebellion, whom hee inforced to conditions of peace, which hee notwithstanding (by his wives instigation) not long after breakes, and marching the second time into *Austria* is slaine in battell *Ladislaus Cunus* King of *Hungary*, ayded the Emperour *Rudolphus*.

At length a peace being concluded with the *Bohemians* by r marriage, the Emperour gaue *Austria*, which the King of *Bohemia* had held many yeares together, to *Albertus* his sonne: and being hindred by diuers businesses in *Germany*, went not downe into *Italie*, neither was hee inclined much that way howsoeuer: for it is reported of him, that hee would sometimes merrily tell a tale of the Foxe that would not visit the Lyon, lying counterfeitly sicke in a certaine

r *Inita* the Empereurs daughter was married to *Wenceslaus* King of *Bohemia*, *Ottacars* sonne.

certaine denne, becauſe hee was affrighted with the foot-ſteps of other beaſts, of which none had returned: notwithſtanding hee deputed a Gouernour in *Italy*. in manner of Vice-Emperour: and as it is written, confirmed the often mentioned Countrey of *Flaminia*, and the *Exarchy* to the Church of *Rome*; when hee ſaw very ſmall commodity returne to him from thoſe parts: For the Emperours wearied with perpetuall diſſention and variance with the Popes, became more remiſſe: neyther would the Popes euer bee at quiet, till they had remoued them forth of the Coaſts of *Italy*: and therefore in a manner ſheltering themſelues vnder the wings of the *French* Kings, and foſtering their factions by the Biſhops of *Germanie*, at length effected their owne wiſhed deſires.

But

But here by the way let vs call to minde the interchangeable course of states, when as they (who were secure, had their being, and held their place and dignity by fauour of the Emperours) were inriched by their goods and liberalities, both arrogated dominions ouer them, and also defrauded them of there patrimony. For they keepe to themselues, not onely a good part of *Italy*, but haue also strictly obliged the Kings of *Sicily* and *Naples*, to their party: which two Kings, both pay them yearely tribute, and also are forbidden to vndertake the imperiall dignity with out their permission, and when they receiue possession from them, amongst other clauses, that is one part of their oath.

That memorable massacre of the *French*, throughout *Sicilie*, hapned in *Rudolphus* the

the Emperours time. For they being in possession of that Country, where after souldiers fashion, playing many insolent and outragious prankes, were by secret conspiracy, after a signe giuen, all put to the sword, when the Bell rung to euening prayers. This Massacre is commonly called the *Sicilian* Vespers: which was committed vpon *Easter* day, in the yeare 1281. *Rudolphus* vpon a summe of money payd, infranchised and set charge-free many Cities in *Italy* belonging to the Empire, as the *Bononians*, *Florentines*, *Genowaies*, *Lucans*, and others.

The *Sicilian* Vespers, 1281.

After this, assembling the Princes at *Franckeford*, he desired, but in vaine, to haue his sonne *Albert* assigned his successor. *Rudolphus* dying, *Adolphus*, of the house of *Nassaw* succeeded, who not long after, beganne to picke quarrels

Adolphus of *Nassaw*, 1292. *an. 9. m 5 d. 7.*

rels with *Albertus* Arch-duke of *Austria*: and moreouer offended the Princes of *Germanie* by his deameanour, as also the Archbishop of *Mentz*, by whose help he was made Emperour, is deposed, and *Albertus* Arch-duke of *Austria*, *Rudolphus* his sonne, is elected: who, vniting his forces, hauing the Princes ayd, makes forward toward *Adolphus*, when giuing him battell in the Bishopricke of *Spire*, *Adolphus* being grieuously wounded by *Albertus*, was soone after slaine by the rest of the souldiers.

Albertus 1298. an. 9. m. 9. d. 5.

After this victory, *Albertus* to confirme his owne title, lest any might report that his former election was vniust, desired to bee solemnely created Emperour; which done, Pope *Boniface* the VIII. reclaimed; denying to ratifie what the rest of the Princes had done: but

but within a while after, when *Philip* the Faire, King of *France*, and hee fell into bitter dissention: hee approoued of *Albertus*, and spoke much in praise of his progenitours. At length, *Albertus* was slaine by his owne kinsmen, as hee was marching into *Bohemia*, hauing all in readinesse, to inuade his sonne *Fredericke* into that king dome. This Pope *Boniface* added a sixth Booke, to *Gregory* the IX, his decretall Epistles, which are contained in fiue Bookes. Amongst the rest, he made a decree, that it might be lawfull for the Pope to dispossesse himselfe of the Papacie; for is written, that he himselfe by sinister meanes, perswaded *Celestine* the V. thereunto, whom hee succeded.

After *Albertus*. *Henry*, of that name the VII. of the house of *Luxemburgh*, is elected

Henry the VII. 1308. an. reg. 9.

ted Emperour. He, hauing by marriage made his sonne King of *Bohemia*, goes downe into *Italie*; the estate whereof was at that time most miserable. For euer since *Fredericke* the II. his decease, about 57 yeers, the Emperour neglected *Italie*, which caused the sundry dilacerations ther of from them, by the greater Nobles, especially by the *Guelphs*, and *Gibelines*, which two factions haue many retainers in those parts.

Two Noble families in *Sueuia*, which after wards remoued into *Italie*.

He therefore first of all constitutes Gouernours ouer the Cities and free burroughs throughout *Lombardie*, and swore the inhabitants to his subiection: then resting a while at *Millaine*, indeauouring, but all in vaine, to reconcile the before-mentioned factions: where when *Turianus*, Gouernour of the Citie, had complotted to assaile him vnawares: after discouerie of the con-

conſpiracie, and ſuppreſſion of his aduerſaries, hee commits the gouernement of the Citie to a Vicount. All the Cities in that Country yeelded into his power and protection, onely *Breſcia* rebelled, the walles whereof (hauing after a long ſiege taken it) hee demoliſht. Then marching through *Genua*, and ſo ſtriking ouer to *Piſa*, arriued at *Rome*: and was crowned by ſome of the Cardinals, becauſe Pope *Clement* the V. hauing left the Citie, was remoued into *France*, and kept his Court at *Auinion*.

When the Cardinals required the oath of him, which they ſaid was to bee giuen to the Pope: hee refuſed it, and would not haue any ſuch kind of oath, to be thereby bound to the Pope: vpon notice here of, the Pope: to inlarge his owne power, expounded that generall forme of the oath at large,

large, and annexed it to the reſt of his decrees now extant. For he himſelfe alſo preferred many lawes, which retaine their name from him, and are called the *Clementines*.

The knights of the Temple ſuppreſt about 1308.

Now alſo thoſe Knights called the *Templers*, being very puiſſant, were by the ſame violence put to death, and made away in diuers places *Philip* the Faire, King of *France*, by the Pope permiſſion, ſeized vpon a great part of their Reuenues. Soone after, the name end memorie of them was condemned: and by the *French* nationall Synod, at *Vienna*, their lands were giuen to thoſe, called the Knights of the *Rhodes*. At this time alſo the Vniuerſitie of *Orleans* was founded by King *Philip*, and Pope *Clements* authoriſie. After the Emperour *Henries* ceaſe and buriall at *Piſa*, being poiſoned as it was ſtrongly ſuſpe-

† He was poiſoned by a Monk with a cup of Wine in the Communion.

ſuſpected: there followed moſt bitter contentions about the election: for *Fredericke* Archduke of *Auſtria* the Emperour *Alberts* ſonne, and *Lewis* Duke of *Bauaria*, were competitors for the Empire. The Archbiſhop of *Mentz* crowned *Lewis* at *Aix*: and the Archbiſhop of *Cullen*, *Fredericke* at *Bena*: and Pope *Iohn* the XXIII. proclaimed them both Emperours, but of the two was more inclined to *Fredericke*, which proclamation increaſed the flame of diſcord, Forces being muſtered vpon both ſides, a ſharpe battell was fought at *Eſſine* a towne in *Suenia*, but in a manner with equall fortune: and ſoone after another in *Bauaria* with ſtronger forces, in which the Arch-duke *Fredericke* was taken priſoner, looſing a good part of his Army, afterwards hee was ſet at liberty, and returning

Lewis 1314 an. 32. m. 11. d. 24. *Fredericke* of *Auſtria* oppoſeth him, and is elected Emperour alſo.

Fredericke the other Emperour taken priſoner. 1323

turning home, dyed within a few yeares after,

Lewis the Emperour hauing thus compaſt the Empire, marches downe into *Italy*, in deſpight of the Pope, conſtitutes Gouernours ouer all the Cities and free-burroughes, and is crowned at *Millaine* by the Archbiſhop there, frō whence (hauing ſent his Ambaſſadours to the Pope at *Auinion*, againe and againe, about his ſolemne inauguration, and there failing) he goes to *Rome*, after hee had ſetled the affaires of *Millaine*. At *Rome* he was entertayned with exceeding great ioy, and crowned by one or two of the Cardinals: but the Pope ingeminating his excommunication, he, by the aduice of his Nobles, creates another Pope, and after this faſhion continued theſe moſt deadly flames of hatred betwixt them, not without moſt

ſcan-

ſcandalous criminations caſt forth on both ſides.

The *French* Annall-writers report that *Charles* the Faire, King *Philips* ſonne, was the firſt that granted Pope *Iohn* tenths of Eccleſiaſticall goods in *France*, and ſhared the prey betwixt themſelues, but the Popes chiefe ayme in procuring this, was to furniſh him ſelfe with money againſt the Emperour.

After the Emperour was returned into *Germany*, the Pope dyes, and his ſucceſſor *Benedict* the XII. both excommunicated and depriued him of his dignity. Whereupon the Emperour conuening the Princes at *Frankeford* in a ſolemne ſpeech, complaines of the Popes iniuries, explaines the reaſons of his allegiance, produces and declares the ancient Lawes of the Empire: with all ſhewing, that the

Bishop of *Rome* had nothing to doe with the Commonwealth of the Empire: For he, who is elected by the princes consent, is truely Emperour, without any assent, consent or consecration from the pope, all that being but a ceremonie, which by little and little crept vp, and now is growne too high, to the great dishonour and indammagement of the Empire.

After this, pope *Benedict* dying, *Clement* the VI. succeeded, one farre more violent then any before him: who in vehement manner propounded certaine ignominious conditions, vpon refusall whereof, hee grew a great deale more furious, sharpely admonishing the princes to choose another Emperour, within a certaine time by him limited, which if they would not doe, hee would take care

thar

that the Church ſhould not want a Patrone and Aduocate any longer. Whileſt the Common-wealth was thus toſſed, the Emperour *Lewis* departed this life, and *Charles* King *Iohn* his ſonne, *Henry* the VII. his Nephew was elected King of *Bohemia*.

A little before this, began the occaſion of that cruell war betwixt the *French* and *Engliſh*. When *Charles* the Faire, King of *France*, dying without iſſue male, which was in the yeere, 1327. *Edward* king of *England*, of that name the III. being ſonne to *Iſabel*, King *Charles* his ſiſter. challenged the Kingdome as due to him; but the Eſtates of *France*, which are called the *Peeres*. ſet the Crowne vpon *Philip* of *Valois*: cozen germane to the deceaſed King *Charles* excluding not onely King *Edward* the ſiſters ſonne, but alſo

King *Charles* his posthume daughter; alledging, that the inheritance of that kingdome did in no wise appertaine to daughters: hereupon insued that bloody warre scarce yet quenched.

Charles the IIII. 1349. *an.* 32. *m* 7. *d.* 14.

The beginning of the Emperour *Charles* the IIII. his raigne was troublesome, and the Imperiall dignitie was offred to *Edward* the third King of *England*: but hee, as it was reported refused it, being hindered by the *French* wars.

After the quenching of sundry combustions in *Germany*, the Emperour *Charles* goes downe into *Italy*, and by consent of Pope *Innocent*, the VI. then being in *France*, is crowned at *Rome*, by some Cardinals, vpon condition not to stay any longer, either at *Rome*, or in *Italie*. Hee returnes to *Millaine*, and granted the office of perpetuall Vice. Emperour

rout for *Lombardie*, to the houſe of the *Viſcounts*, who then bore great ſway in *Millaine*; in reſpect of which honour, they gaue him an huge maſſe of money, and not they onely, but others alſo vpon whom hee had beſtowed any thing: which act much extenuated the Emperours authority in that Counntry.

After his returne out of *Italie*, hee ſummoned a Diet of Princes, and there preferred that decree of the Empire, called the *Golden bull*: laſtly, he aſſignes his ſonne *Wenceſlaus* his ſucceſſor in the Empire; which, as it is writen, he procured with great difficultie, though with large rewards: and not long after died.

In his raigne, *Iohn* King of *France* *Philip* of *Valois* his ſonne, together with his yongeſt ſonne *Philip*, afterwards Duke of *Burgundie*, ſirnamed

Containing the lawes and rites to be obſerued in the election of the Emp: as alſo the dignitie and office of each Elector, and other Princes and Nobles

the Stout, or the Bold; was, in pitcht field, neere *Poictiers* taken prisoner by the *English*, who were then in possession of a good part of *Aquitaine*, and the Citie of *Burdeaux*. Many of the prime Nobilitie wrere slaine in that battell. The Anuall-Writers record, that the *English* were not aboue 7000-when the *French* made against them with many forces, about 60000 strong. This was in the yeere, 1356. the XI I. of the Kalends. of *October* The King was carried prisoner into *England*, and died the seuenth yeere after.

Wenceslaus 1376 *an* 2. *m.* 5. *d.* 28.

Wenceslaus. being (as historie speakes of him) both by nature and course of life, very vicious, quite neglected the Common-wealth. Hee for a summe of money, created *Iohn Galeas*, of the house of the Vicouuts, (a man both couetous and cruell) Duke of *Millaine* and

and *Lombardy*.

In his raigne, *Iagello* Duke of *Lithuania* or *Luten*, was, after King *Lewis* his death, created King of *Polonia*, by conſent of the Nobles: This King was great Grand-father to *Sigiſmund*, the moderne King there, and was the firſt that receiued Baptiſme, changing his name to *Vladiſlaus*,

Sigiſmund King of *Hungarie* was ouerthrowne in battell at *Nicopolis* by *Baiazet* Emperour of the Turkes, the third of the kalends of *October Charles* the VI. King of *France*, ſent a goodly troope of horſe for ayd into *Hungary*, vnder conduct of *Iohn*, ſonne of *Philip* the bold Duke of *Burgundy*, which *Iohn* was taken in that battell, and carried priſoner to the Turke, where hee ſtood at the next doore to death, but yet eſcaped, which as (the *French* Writers relate) happe-

ned thus: There was a certaine Phiſiognomer (one of that packe that profeſſe to know the diſpoſitions and natures of men, by their body, eyes, countenance and face) familiar with *Baiazet*; who viewing the priſoner, willed and perſwaded the Emperour to diſmiſſe him in ſafety. For hee ſhould bee the man, that after his returne home, ſhould kindle a moſt violent combuſtion, which ſhould ſet a good part, eyther of *Europe*, or of the Chriſtian world, one fire. Vpon this perſwaſion, the Turke diſmiſſes him, and the reſt of the Nobility, that were priſoners after they had payd 20000. crownes for their ranſome.

After his returne into *France*, hee began to quarrell with *Lewis* Duke of *Orleans*, the Kings brother. For he by reaſon of the Kings ſickneſſe, which was in a manner diſperate,

rate, deſired to gouerne the Common-wealth, being neareſt of kindred to the king. But the Duke of *Burgundy*, for that he was couſin-germane to the King, and elder then the other, challenged the gouernment (his Father *Philip* being dead) rather to belong to him. This ſore euery day more and more feſtering, at length the Duke of *Orleans* was murthered in *Paris* in the night time as hee was going home from ſupper. The murtherers were ſent priuily by the Duke of *Burgundy*, who was ſo farre from denying the fact, that hee maintained it. This was in the yeare 1407, the ninth of the kalends of *December*.

The XII. yeare following, the Duke of *Burgundy* comming to a place appointed, about a pacification in this cauſe, was entrapped by treachery and murthered by certaine

taine of the Duke of *Orleans* his friends that had ſworne his death: *Charles* the Dolphin, the Kings ſonne, who was iudge in that controuerſie being preſent at the fact.

This is the head-ſpring of the warre betwixt thoſe two houſes, which hath ſo often broke forth euer ſince that time, till within our memory.

Robert 1400. *an.* 9 *mſt. d.* 22.

Wenceſlaus, by reaſon of his negligence growne into contempt: the Princes depriue him of the gouernment, and elect *Robert* Duke of *Bauaria*, Count *Palatine*. He preſently applied himſelfe about reformation of *Wenceſlaus* his miſgouernment: and would not ratifie the grant made by him to *Iohn Galeas*, but contriued a new, how to reduce *Lombardy* into the imperiall dominions: for which and other ſuch like cauſes, marching downe into *Italy*, the ſayd *Galeas* hindered

dered and repelled him. The State of *Italy*, was in thoſe times very troubleſome, chiefly by the Emperour *Charles* and *Wenceſlaus* their default, being too indulgent ouer that Nation: for ouer and beſides *Galeas* lately made Duke of *Millaine*: The *Venetians*, *Florentines*, and *Genowaies*, made warre vpon their neighbours: and all right was ſwayed by the ſword and violence. Futhermore by reaſon of the Popes continuall abſence, nothing but factions, and thoſe dangerous ones, ſwarmed at *Rome*.

Then alſo *Galeas* Duke of *Millaine* made warre vpon the *Florentines*, who to worke their owne reuenge ſolicited the Emperour by large proffers to march downe againe into *Italy*: but when the Emperour was come to *Padua*, Hee (at requeſt of the *Venetians*, who likewiſe hated *Galeas*, and with-

withall perceiuing that their prouision was not answerable to their great promises) retires into *Germanie*, casting off all care of *Italy*, whose estate afterwards grew more weake, by its owne ciuill broyles.

Sigismund 1411. *an* 26. *m.* 8.

To the Emperour *Robert*, *Sigismund* the Emperour *Wenceslaus* his brother King of *Hungary* succeeds at this time there were three Popes, *Iohn* the XXXIII. *Gregory* the XII. and *Benedict* the XIII. insomuch as by their factions, almost all the prouinces of *Europe*, were at oddes. For there was not one publike Councell, at any time since *Innocent* the III. as their bookes testifie, being 200. yeares, and the state of the Cleargy was most corrupt, a kinde of bottomlesse sincke of vices and malady hauing made an inundation, which in a manner scorned to bee stopped. For *Boniface* the VIII.

VIII. was Pope in the interim, who tooke vpon him both the Papall and Imperiall authority. Then the next after him, *Clement* the V. of *Burdeaux*, at *Philip* the *Faire* the French Kings requeſt (forſaking *Rome*) remoued his Court into *France*: and after his death the Cardinals falling into ſharp diſſentions amongſt themſelues, made a vacancy for ſome yeares: but at length *Iohn* the XXII. of *Aquitaine*, was created Pope at *Lyons*. The fifth Pope after him, which was *Gregory* the XI. (when the Popes had kept their Court in *France* then for 71. yeares together) returnes to *Rome*; but after his death *Vrbane* the VI. a *Neapolitan*, and *Clement* the VI. a *Sauoyſin*, contended for the Papacy. The firſt whereof vpheld himſelfe by the *Italian* party, and liued at *Rome*, the other

other by the *French*, and liued at *Auinion*. After those two were dead, the other there before mentioned, were by seuerall factions chosen in their places, the Papall Monster hauing then three heads.

At what time many worthy men both *Italians* and *French*, deplored the State of the Church, inueighing bitterly enough against the corruptions and vices of those times, as farre as they could see in those dayes of darkenesse. Amongst the rest, *Petrarch* was one, who when the Popes and Cardinals lay at *Auinion*, called that City the whore of *Babylon*.

Wherevpon to determine that Controuersie, a Councell was assembled at *Constance* in *Germany*, by order whereof those Three were deposed, and *Martin* the V. elected. At this Councell *Iohn Hus* and *Hierome* of *Prague* was burnt for

for hereſie, though they came thither vnder ſafe conduct from the Emperor *Sigiſmund*: the Emperour is much commended, for that He, to benefit the Common-wealth went almoſt to all the Kings in Chriſtendome, to exhort them to haue a care of the common good.

After the affaires were ſetled in *Germany*, hee goes downe into *Italy*, at what time the *Venetians* and *Florentines* were vp in Armes both by ſea and land, againſt *Philip Maria*, *Iohn Galeas* his ſon, Duke of *Millaine*, and ſo forward to *Rome*, being there conſecrated by *Eugenius* the IIII. and returned by *Baſil*, where then there was another Councell held.

Albertus Archduke of *Auſtria*, King of *Hungary*, and *Bohemia*, was his ſucceſſour: whom the ciuill warres at home, and forraigne abroad held

Albertus II 1437. an. 1. m. 9 d. 27.

held backe from *Italy*.

About this time, those wits were rouzed vp againe, which beganne to poliſh the liberall ſciences, language, and good letters, the *Italians* indeed gaue the onſet, who were furthered by helpe of the *Græcians*, and then after followed the *Germanes*, *French*, and other Nations: and further, when the inuention of [n] Printing came to light, ſo immenſe was the profit thereof, that it is incredible what a happy and ioyfull progreſſe enſued. For now, this courſe of ſtudie hauing beene conſtantly continued euer ſince that time; It is aduanced ſo high, that this our age may enter into compariſon, with the moſt learned ages in time paſt, and in this regard is bleſſed aboue all the reſt, in that it hath pleaſed God to illuminate this knowledge of the beſt Arts and languages with

[n] Pinnting was inuented in *Germany* in the yeare 1440 So *Pollydor Virgil*, and others affirme.

with the true knowledge of Him: whereas thoſe Ancients, furniſhed onely with the helpe of learning, though men moſt eloquent, yet they were plunged in depth of darknes, and ſearcht in vaine, after that quinteſſence of goodneſſe, whereof they writ ſo much.

To *Albertus*, *Fredericke* the III. Archduke of *Auſtria*, ſucceeded, hee paſſed quietly to *Rome*, and receiued conſecration from Pope *Nicholas* the V. ſo returning home without drawing a ſword in *Italy*. In the fourth yeare of his raigne *Vladiſlaus*, *Vladiſlaus* his ſonne King of *Polonia* and *Hungary*, hauing by Pope *Eugenius* the III. his iuſtigation, broke the Truce, was ouerthrowne in battell, and ſlaine at *Varna*, or *Dionyſiopolis*, the XI. of Nouember, by *Amurath* the II. Emperour of the Turkes. The IX yeare after this, *Mahomet Amuraths*

Frederiek III. 1440. *an.* 53 *m* 7 *d.* 19

Constantinople taken by *Amurath* the II. 1453. The Turkish Army at the siege thereof consisted of 400000 men.

*From 1453. when it was token, till 1556. when *Sleidan* writ this booke. *Maximilian* 1493. *an.* 25 *m.* 4 *d.* 25: The Moors chased out of *Granado* in *Spaine*, 1487 *Charles* the V. 1519. *an.* 38. *m.* 6, *d.* 27.

*Arch d. of *Austria.*

Amurath's sonne, tooke the City of *Constantinople* by force of Armes, which his successors haue now held this * 103. yeares, keeping their Imperiall Court there. *Casimer Vladislaus* his brother succeeded him in the Kingdomes of *Polonia*: and *Ladislaus*, the Emperor *Albert* the II. his posthume sonne, in *Hungary*.

To *Fredericke* the Emperor his son *Maximilian* succeeded. A little before the death of this Emperour *Fredericke*, *Ferdinando* King of *Spaine*, chasing out the *Moores*, annexed *Betica*, commonly called the Kingdome of *Granado*, to his owne Crowne,

Maximilian (as he did many more) made warre also vpon the *Venetians*. Him the most puissant Emperor, *Charles* (being his grandchild by his son **Philip*) succeeded, who now swayes the Scepter.

This

Thus out of that which we haue mentioned, it clearly appeares, after what manner the *Romane* Empire, then which, none euer was or will be, more potent: is now in a manner cruſht in peeces. For throughout *Aſia* we haue not ſo much as a foot, or a nailes breadth, as the prouerbe is. The Turkes, Scythians, and other Enemies of our Religon, hold all there. wee haue loſt all *Africa*, but what hath beene recouered of late yeares, by *Charles* the V. when hee wonne *Tunis* from *Ænobarbe* the Turkiſh Lieutenant, atchieuing a glorious victory, and made the King there tributary to him: as alſo the fifteenth yeare following, beſieged and tooke the Town of *Aphricke*.

Portugal, *Spaine*, *France* *Britaine*, *Denmarke*, *Sarmatia*, *Pannonia*, *Illyricum*, all *Greece*. with the adiacent Countries are

are torne away: as also the Ilands of *Sicilio*, *Sardinia*, *Corfica*, *Maiorique and Minoriqu-* and *Sauoy*, which Prouinces haue their peculiar Lords, who hold full power in all matters, and are not at a penny charge about any affaires of the Empire.

Now let vs looke vpon *Italy* the old, ancient, and first patrimony of the *Romane* Empire: but wherein doth it participate with vs? The Kings of *Spaine*, by ancient succession hold *Calabria*, *Apulia*, *Campania*, *and Naples*. The Popes keepe in their hands the City of *Rome*, formerly the Emperours palace and Court Imperiall together with *Marca de Ancona*, *Romandiola* and part of *Tuscane*, who are so farre from acknowledging subiection to the Emperour, that they hold the Emperours and their Deputies to bee bound

bound to them.

Thoſe Cities there of any ſtrength, either haue their proper Lord', or elſe are ſwayed by factions, and hauing nothing at all to doe with vs. Now for the *Venetins* what a company hold they, not onely of goodly Cities, and freeburrowes, but alſo Prouinces: they themſelues in the interim, being an abſolute free-ſtate, and quite ſeparated from the *Romane* Empire. As for *Inſubria* commonly called *Lombardy*, that indeed belongs ſomewhat nearer to vs: but it totters too, neither receiue wee any certaine profit from thence For after that our Emperours had, as abouesaid, firſt conſtituted Viſcounts there, as they call them, and afterwards Dukes, how miſerably was it rent to peeces, and euer ſince that time how little did it benefit vs? For our Em-

Emperours neglecting it in time of the warres there, the house of the *Sfortia's* dispossessing the *Vicounts*, seized vpon it whom afterwards *Lewis* the XII and *Francis* the I. Kings of *France*, excluded; the latter where of held it for sixe yeeres, till the Emperour *Charles* the V. recouered it.

Thus you see, no reuenues come from any part of *Italy*, for they neither repaire to our Diets, not contribure any thing at all to any publike vse or necessitie, but what they doe voluntarily, or in fauour to the Emperour: onely *Germany* remaines, which alwaies repugned the *Romane* Empire, scarce euer free from rebellion, as before appears, till at length it was gathered togethsr by the Emperour *Charles* the Great, and reduced into one body: after which time, when the power of electing the Emperours,

perours, was committed to the ſeauen Electors, as we haue formerly ſhewed, it became the Emperours Court and Manſion place. And here too wee muſt conſider, with what difficultie this little diminitiue body of the Empire, congealed in *Germanie*, could incorporate it ſelf: for when were we euer free from iarres and ciuill broiles? So now what ſoeuer goes vnder the name of the Empire, is included within the bounds of *Germany*, for all forraigne places, and thoſe without the compaſſe thereof, are fallen away, Howbeit we ſee there are many, euen within theſe ſmall compaſt limits, that flie backe, and as much as they can, withdraw themſelues and their countries forth of the iuriſdiction of the Empire. I paſſe ouer in ſilence thoſe neighbouring Kings and other Princes, that day by day

catch & ſnatch away, as much as they can from this feeble and ſapleſſe little body, which ſcarce cleaues to the bones: ſtriuing to bring that into their owne dominions, which belonged to the Common wealth.

But to come to an end in ſome time, let vs lend our attention to *Daniels* prophecie, concerning all that is ſpoken. we haue treated of the Image that *Nabuchodonozar* ſaw in his dreame, whereto wee will returne againe; but in the intetim, take a view of ſome other places. In his VII. Chap. he deſcribes the foure beaſts, which in a dream he ſaw comming out of the Sea: A Lyon, a Beare, a Leopard, and the fourth and laſt, he ſaies, was terrible and dreadfull to behold. The Lyon ſignifies the kingdome of *Aſſyria*, the two wings which he had, are as it were the two mem-

members of that Empire, *Babylon* and *Aſſyria*. By the Beare is vnderſtood the kingdome of *perſia*, by which *Babylon* was conquered: the three ribs which hee ſaies were in his mouth betwixt his teeth, are the three chiefe Kings of that Monarchie, *Cyrus*. *Darius* and *Artaxerxes*. who were more famous then the reſt, and eate much fleſh as he ſpeakes, that is, brought many nations into their ſubiection.

The Leopard is *Alexander* the Great, or the Greeke Empire; his foure wings & heads, are the foure kingdomes which riſe out of that Monarchy, after *Alexanders* death. The fourth and laſt Beaſt is the *Romane* Empire: the tenne hornes are his members or prouinces. ſuch as were *Syria*, *Agypt* *Aſia*, *Greece* *Affricke*, *Spaine*, *Gallia*, *Italy*, *Germanie*, *Brittaine*: for all thoſe

they held.

Now a certaine little horne, grew vp and ſhot forth amongſt the tenne hornes; which pluckt away three hornes from thoſe ten. This notifies the kingdome of *Mahomet* or the Turke, which from a ſmall beginning, budding forth of the *Romane* Monarchy, ſeized vpon three of the chiefeſt parts thereof, *Egypt*, *Aſia*, and *Greece*. Further this little horne hath eyes, and was reproachfull againſt God: For *Mahomet* vented a new kinde of doctrine, which was well liked of by his followers, as carrying ſome ſhew of wiſedome in it. Thoſe are the eyes, but indeed hee blaſphemes God. For hee aboliſhes the Bookes of the Prophets and Apoſtles, and acknowledges no benefit by Chriſt, but reproachfully raiſes againſt all doctrine concerning Chriſt

Fur-

Further, that little horne, ſaith he, ſhal make warre with the Saints, and ſore afflict them, till the Ancient of daies ſhall come to iudgement, who hath neither beginning nor end: whereby it clearely appeares, that within the time of this Empire, the tearme of this world ſhall haue an end, and ſhall neuer be againe: but after the diſſolution of all earthly principalities, then ſhall follow that perpetuall kingdome, whereof Chriſt ſhall be prince and Head.

In his eight chapter, the prophet *Daniel* deſcribes the Ramme and the Goat, which the Angell afterwards plainely interprets, ſaying, the Ram with two hornes, betokens the Kings of the *Medes* and *Perſians*: and the Goat, the Greeke Empire, and the great horne in his forehead, the firſt king of that Empire: and that foure

hornes ſucceeded after that horne was broken; it ſignifies ſaith he, that foure kingdomes ſhall riſe out of that Empire, but not to bee compared to that firſt King for ſtrength and puiſſance.

Here we may ſee how properly and infallibly the prophet *Daniel* portraies *Alexander* the Great, two hundred yeeres and more before his raigne. For it ſhall ſo fall out, ſaith hee, that the Goat ſhall not touch the earth; that is, he ſhould runne ouer his warres with exceeding celeritie, and no man ſhould be able to deliuer the Ramme out of his hand: for *Alexander* raigned onely twelue yeeres, in which little inch of time, hee almoſt ſubdued all *Aſia*, as wee haue aboue ſhewed. And though the *Medes* and *perſians* were of incredible ſtrength, yet in three ſet battels, *Darius* was ou er-

ouerthrowne, and loſt his life and his Empire both at once.

Many write, that when *Alexander* came to *Ieruſalem*, the High-prieſt read that place of *Daniel* to him, which exceedingly reioyced him.

Againe, that another horne ſhould riſe from amongſt thoſe foure hornes, at firſt but ſmall, but afterwards very powerfull, which ſhould grieuouſly oppreſſe the Sanctuary: hereby ſaith hee, hee foretells thoſe moſt bitter perſecutions which the *Iewes* ſhould ſuffer vnder *Alexander* the Great his ſucceſſors, the Kings of *Egypt* and *Syria*, betwixt whom the Country of *Iudea* lies: For the *Iewes* haue felt that horne which roſe out of the foure hornes, in *Antiochus Epiphanes* King of *Syria*, that moſt cruell deſtroier.

Hither alſo, we muſt apply the eleuenth chapter, where-

in hee ſpeakes againe of *Alexander* the Great, and ſo copiouſly and properly, that it may rather ſeeme an Hiſtory, then a Propheſie.

But now againe let vs returne to *Nabuchodonozars* Image, whereof, vpon occaſion wee ſpoke in our firſt booke; as for the interpretation thereof, concerning the three firſt Monarchies, I will not repeat it, becauſe it is both perſpicuous, as alſo made good by the times themſelues, onely we will ſpeake ſomething of the fourth, becauſe it both properly appertaines vnto vs, who liue in it, and is more exactly deſcribed by *Daniel*: *It ſhall be of iron*, ſaith he, *which ſhall breake in pieces, and bring all the reſt of the Monarchies in ſubiection to it*: there needs not many words in explanation, hereof; for the matter it ſelfe ſpeakes, and it manifeſtly appeares

peares out of the hiſtorie of thoſe Monarchs which wee haue reckoned vp.

But the Images feet, and the toes of the feet, are part of iron, part of potters clay. As the foot of a mans body is diuided into toes, ſo the *Romane* Empire, after it hath for a while continued ſtrong, being ſupported by iron legges, and incircled the whole world in its circumference; ſhall fall into toes, and that maſſie body ſhall be diſſolued. This alſo is plainely effected; and needs no explication: for at this day, what is more diuided then the body of that moſt ſpacious Empire? And though the caſe thus ſtand, yet becauſe the ſole of the foot is of iron, the foundation ſhall remaine, and ſhall neuer bee extinguiſhed, but the reliques, title, and dignitie thereof ſhall endure till Chriſt at his comming ſhall ſet

a peri od to all humane things, but it is cleare as noone day, and beyond all doubt, that it is now at the loweſt ebbe.

That goodly tree is fallen, but the root ſtickes faſt, and remaines yet, not hauing any ſappe, and therefore vnable to grow vp, and increaſe againe: but quite dead and withered, yet no force of man ſhall bee able vtterly to extirpate this roote, and foot. ſoale of iron nature, but it ſhall ſticke faſt grounded in the earth, till the whole world ſhall be deſtroi- ad. Hereof alſo wee haue had experience. for many haue often attempted the ſubuerſion of this ſmall and ſlender parcel of the Empire, as the Pope of *Rome*, and laſtly the Turkes: who: though they haue done great matters, and it may bee promiſe greater to themſelues yet they ſhall not make vp ſuch a maſſie bodie, as may hold

hold compariſon with the puiſſance of the *Romanes*: neither ſhall they ſubuert this ſeed-plot of the Empire which remaines though it be both drie and withered: nor can any fift Monarchie be raiſed.

Though *Germany* onely hath the title and poſſeſſion of the Empire, yet if it would ioyne hearts and hands, it might eaſily expell all forraign forces, as many be prooued by many arguments.

The Turkes of late yeetes haue runne in very farre vpon vs, and after the winning of a *Boſphoros*, or *Bogazin* in *Thrace*, raged vp and downe farre and wide in *Europe* whoſe territories are now directly bordering vpon *Germany*, which ſeemes expoſed to tht greateſt danger, as alſo *Italy*, by reaſon of the neareneſſe. But if wee looke a little nearer into *Daniel*, it is to bee hoped,

The ſtreight wherupon *Conſtantinople* ſtand in that par diuiding *Europe* and *Aſia*, being not aboue 7 miles broad.

hoped, that their power and greatneſſe is now at its full height. For *Daniel* giues them onely three hornes, as wee haue before recited, which they now haue, being firſt of all made Lords of all *Aſia*, then of *Greece* and *Egypt*. Vnder the name of *Greece*, may be comprehended all thoſe Countries almoſt as farre as *Sclauonia* or *Wendenland*. And though at this preſent they are in poſſeſſion of a good part of *Hungarie*, and be it granted, that ſo it may fall out, as they may infeſt *Germanie*. or other adiacent Countries: yet becauſe their dominions muſt be confined to certaine bounds, and muſt not extend to comparíſon with the *Romane* potencie, as we haue formerly ſhewed: it is credible that thoſe prouinces ſhall not fall into their ſubiection, as thoſe three are at this day, *Greece Egypt*, and

and *Asia*.

They shall make warre with the Saints and rage with extremitie of cruelties, against the Professors of the name of Christ, and this their furie shall endure till the end of the world as *Daniel* clearly testifies. And this is the maine cause of his Prophecie, that wee being hereby admonished and ascertained of the calamities and miseries of the last daies should not bee deiected in minde, but looke for a freedome by the comming of Christ our Sauiour: who will presently, as hee himselfe speakes, take off these afflictions, and transport his seruants into a firme and peaceable station. and wipe all teares from their eies

Certaine places in *Daniel* doe properly appertaine to the *Iewes*, wherein their deliuerance from captiuitie is fore told, and likewise the certaine time Dan, 9,

time (which is there set down and expressed) of the comming of the Messias promised to the Fathers. The rest of his Prophecies belong to the worlds last age of all, and to those that shall then liue: when also that little horne, *Mahomets* posteritie, shall make warre with the Saints: *and when that man of sinne and wickednesse shall bee reuealed and disclosed; who sits in the Temple of God, vaunting himselfe as though he were God*: for *Daniel* also presignified his tyrannies, as *Paul* in his Epistles expresly interprets. 2 Thes. 2.

Sathan, whom Christ himselfe cals the Prince of this world, who at all time else, but especially in the last age of this fading world, shall rage most of all, letting loose the raines of all his wrath and furie, and shall stirre vp enemies against Christ; who shall not onely

onely tyrannize by force of Armes, but alſo by falſe doctrine ſeduce men into deceit and errour, inſomuch that the very elect ſhall ſcarce eſcape their ſnares *Mat.* 24,

Surely this is the very time which *Daniel* in his twelfth chapter points at: being ſo full fraught with affliction and calamitie as neuer was before, or euer ſhall be hereafter, For he promiſes vs no ioy, but denounces moſt cruell perſecutions, when he ſaies, that thoſe calamities which hee ſpeakes of, ſhall indure *till the ſcattering of the power of the holy people bee accompliſhed.* Dan 12.7.

Therefore Gods ſeruants ſhall bee perſecuted all the world ouer, and the godly ſhall be afflicted in diuers places, till the end of the world which teſtimony of the Propher, or rather of the Angell, bereaues vs of all hope of reconciliation

conciliation and aggregation. For he ſpeakes of a perpetuall ſcattering and diſſipation; and after that diſſentions haue ariſen about doctrine and Religion, then at length he mentions; the end, when CHRIST himſelfe ſhall appeare.

But to comfort, cheare vp, and ſuſtaine thoſe that ſhall then liue, preſently after thoſe miſeries, he places the reſurrection of the dead, which that we may finde to our ioy and comfort, wee ought with feruent prayers to beſeech God. And Chriſt himſelfe warrants vs for the credence wee ought to giue to *Daniel*, who in his ſermon rehearſes a place taken out from thence, and commends it to his Auditors.

Mat. 24
Mar. 13.

Thus therefore, theſe our times, being the moſt miſerable, we ought conſiderately to ponderate and diligently look into

into this Prophet, who preaches to vs now acting the laſt ſcene vpon this worlds ſtage: that we may fortifie our ſelues both in time of theſe preſent afflictions, as alſo againſt all imminent ſtormes and tempeſts, with true and aſſured conſolation, as with a certaine rampire and bulwarke.

The

The names of those Kings of *Assyria* from *Ascatades* to *Sardanapalus*. which *Sleidan* mentions in the beginning of his first Booke, but names them not.

Amyntas.

Belochus.

Bellopares.

Lamprides.

Sozares.

Lampares.

Pannias.

Sosarmus.

Mitreus.

Tan-

Tautannes.

Teuteus.

Timaus.

Derlius.

Eupales.

Laoſthenes.

Pirithidias.

Ofrateus.

Ofragineus.

Aſcrazapes.

FINIS.